

# George Washington Papers, Series 3, Subseries 3C, Varick Transcripts, Letterbook 1

## To THE NEW YORK LEGISLATURE

June 26, 1775.

Gentlemen: At the same time that with you I deplore the unhappy necessity of such an Appointment, as that with which I am now honoured, I cannot but feel sentiments of the highest gratitude for this affecting Instance of distinction and Regard.

May your every wish be realized in the success of America, at this important and interesting Period; and be assured that the every exertion of my worthy Colleagues and myself will be equally extended to the re-establishment of Peace and Harmony between the Mother Country and the Colonies, as to the fatal, but necessary, operations of War. When we assumed the Soldier, we did not lay aside the Citizen; and we shall most sincerely rejoice with you in that happy hour when the establishment of American Liberty, upon the most firm and solid foundations, shall enable us to return to our Private Stations in the bosom of a free, peaceful and happy Country. I am etc.<sup>28</sup>

28. Peter Van Brugh Livingston was then president of the New York Congress. The last paragraph answered that part of the letter of June 7 from the New York Congress to Washington, quoted, in part, by Sparks: "On a general in America, fortune also should bestow her gifts, that he may rather communicate luster to his dignities than receive it, and that his country in his property, his kindred, and connexions, may have sure pledges that he will faithfully perform the duties of his high office, and readily lay down his power when the general weal requires it." The entire letter is printed in Force's *American Archives*, Fourth Series, vol. 2, 1282. The address and the General's reply were published by order of the Congress. The letter of June 7 is not found in the *Washington Papers*.

## To THE MASSACHUSETTS LEGISLATURE

Head Quarters, Cambridge, July 10, 1775.

Sir: After much difficulty and delay, I have procured such Returns of the State of the Army as will enable us to form a Judgment of its Strength. It is with great Concern I find it far inadequate to our General expectations and the Duties that may be required of it; the Number of Men fit for Duty in the Forts Raised in this Province, including all the out Posts & Artillery

does not amount to 9,000; The Troops raised in the other Colonies are more Complete; but yet fall Short of their Establishment; so that, upon the whole, I cannot Estimate the Present Army at more than 14,500 Men Capable of Duty; I have the Satisfaction to find the Troops, both in Camp & Quarters, very healthy; so that the Deficiency must arise from the Regiments never having been filled up to the Establishment & the Number of Men on Furlough; But the former is by much the most Considerable; Under all these Circumstances, I, yesterday, called a Council of War, and, Inclosed, I send you an Extract of our Determination, so far as they Respect the Province of Massachusetts Bay.<sup>60</sup> Your own Prudence will suggest the Necessity of Secrecy on this Subject, as we have the utmost Reason to believe the Enemy suppose our Numbers much greater than they are; an Error which it is not our Interest to remove.

The great extent of our Lines and the uncertainty which may be the Point of Attack, added to the Necessity of immediate Support, have induced me to order that Horses ready Saddled should be kept at Several Posts, in order to bring the most early Intelligence of any Movement of the Enemy; For this Purpose, I should be glad that 10 Horses might be provided as soon as possible. As I am informed the Congress purposes to rise immediately, I should be glad to know what Committees are left, or upon whom the executive Business devolves.<sup>61</sup> I have the honor, etc.

60. The council of war concluded that the enemy numbered 11,500 men; that the present posts occupied should be defended; that the American Army should be raised to 22,000 men; that the Massachusetts regiments should be recruited, and the provincial congress should furnish a temporary reinforcement; and that the “Welch Mountains near Cambridge and in the rear of the

Roxbury lines” was a suitable place for a rendezvous in case of a dissolution of the Army or the positions should become untenable.— *Ford*.

61. When the congress rose the committee of safety was left in charge. This committee and the committee of supplies were ordered by the congress to confer with the General, who was asked to designate the number of militia needed. Washington decided to delay calling out the militia as long as it was consistent with safety, in order not to interfere with the harvest season.

**To GOVERNOR JONATHAN TRUMBULL**

Cambridge, July 18, 1775.

Sir: Allow me to return you my sincere thanks for the kind wishes and favorable Sentiments express'd in yours of the

13th Instant. As the Cause of our common Country, calls us both to an active and dangerous Duty, I trust that Divine Providence, which wisely orders the Affairs of Men, will enable us to discharge it with Fidelity and Success. The uncorrupted Choice of a brave and free People, has raised you to deserved Eminence; that the Blessings of Health and the still greater Blessing of long continuing to Govern *such* a People may be yours, is the Sincere Wish, of Sir etc.

**To GOVERNOR NICHOLAS COOKE**

Cambridge Camp, July 18, 1775.

Sir: You will please to accept my sincere Acknowledgements for your favor delivered me by Genl. Greene on my appointment to the Chief Command of the American Army. The Voluntary Choice of Freeman, contending in the great Cause of civil Liberty, and the concurring Approbation of the wise and good, at the same Time that they confer the highest Honor upon the object of their choice, demand the utmost Energy and Exertion of my poor Abilities; Such as they are, my Country has,

and shall at all Times command them. Allow me now, Sir, to express my warmest Wishes for your Health and Happiness, and to assure you that I am etc.

**To GOVERNOR JONATHAN TRUMBULL**

Cambridge, July 18, 1775.

Sir: It is with no small concern, that I find the Arrangement of General Officers made by the Honble. Continental Congress, has produced much Dissatisfaction; as the Army is upon a General Establishment, their Right, to Supercede and Controul a Provincial one, must be unquestionable; and, in such a Cause, I should hope every Post would be deemed Honor able, which gave a Man Opportunity to serve his Country.

A Representation from the Congress of this Province, with such Remarks as occurred to me on this Subject, is now before the Continental Congress; In the mean Time, I beg leave to assure you that unbiassed by any private Attachments, I shall Studiously endeavour to reconcile their Pretensions to their Duty, and so dispose them, as to prevent, as far as possible, any Inconveniencies to the Public Service from this Competition. I have the honor, &c.

**To THE MASSACHUSETTS LEGISLATURE**

Cambridge Camp, July 23, 1775.

Sir: I have had an application made to me this Day, by the several Captains of Colo. Phinney's Regiments from Casco Bay; they represent that their Men inlisted and have marched down upon a Promise, that they should receive 40/ Advance and Billeting Money at 8d p Day; that under this Expectation they left their Family's destitute, and have detain'd the Teamsters to carry back their Money: They have met with some disappointments arising from the Situation of the Assembly, which has raised an unhappy Spirit in the Regiments and requires immediate attention.

You will therefore Please to lay the Matter before the General Court, with my Request, that proper Steps may be taken to satisfy them, as I have engaged that upon their Passing Muster, they shall receive the usual and legal Allowance. I have the Honor to be etc.

**To GOVERNOR NICHOLAS COOKE**

Camp at Cambridge, July 26, 1775.

Sir: Yesterday I had an Account that three Men of War and Nine Transports had Sail'd out of Boston and in Evening I received a Note the Copy whereof is inclosed. The great Distress they are in at Boston for fresh Provisions makes it extreamly probable they may make some deprivations along the Coasts; I have therefore thought it Proper to give you the earliest Notice, that the owners of those Islands and the Inhabitants along the Coasts, may take the necessary Precautions for the Security of their Property. At the same time I must add, that the Conduct of this Groves in getting into Boston again immediately, renders his intelligence very Suspicious as to their Destination; But their Sailing may be depended on: You will please to make use of this Intelligence under all its circumstances, as you shall judge most conducive to the Public good.

And believe me to be, etc.

**To GOVERNOR JONATHAN TRUMBULL**

July [27], 1775.

Sir: I am to acknowledge your Favor of the 17th Inst. informing me of the destination of the Troops raising in your Colony. As the season is now advanced and the Enemy considerably reinforced, we have the utmost Reason to believe expect, any Attack that may be made, will not be much longer delayed; I should therefore think it highly necessary, the new raised Troops should join the Army with all possible Expedition. Upon Inquiry with respect to the Flour, I do not find our Necessities to be such as to require an immediate Transportation during the Harvest, but as soon as it can be

sent with Convenience, you will please to give directions for that Purpose. — Colo. Trumbull will advise you to what Place it is to be addressed and to whose care.

Agreeable to your Intimation, I have ordered the Express to wait on you and shall do so in future.

We have had no Occurrence in the Camp of any material Consequence; on both sides we are Strengthening our Lines in full view of each other.—I am Sir, etc.

**To THE MASSACHUSETTS LEGISLATURE**

Cambridge, July 29, 1775.

Sir: I have this Moment received a Letter from Chelsea of which the inclosed is an Extract. As the Inhabitants are coming out, in a different manner than proposed by your Assembly to the Select Men of the Town of Boston, I have not delayed a moments Time in giving you the earliest information of it; and request, that you may take the Matter into Consideration and determine what is proper to be done upon the Occasion. If you think it prudent to receive them in this Manner; Query, whether it may not be proper to appoint some person to attend the movement. I am in haste and with great respect, Sir etc.

**To THE MASSACHUSETTS LEGISLATURE**

Camp at Cambridge, July 31, 1775.

Sir: I have considered the Application made me yesterday from the General Court, with all the attention due to the Situation of the People, in whose behalf it is made, and the Respect due to such a Recommendation. Upon

referring to my Instructions and Consulting with those Members of Congress who are Present, as well as the General Officers, they all agree that it would not be consistent with my Duty to detach any Part of the Army now here on any Particular Provincial Service. It has been debated in Congress and Settled, that the Militia, or other Internal Strength of each Province, is to be

applied for Defence against those Small and Particular Depredations which were to be expected, and to which they were Supposed to be competent.<sup>47</sup> This will appear the more Proper, when it is considered that every Town and, indeed, every Part of our Sea Coast, which is exposed to these Depredations, would have an equal claim upon this Army; It is the Misfortune of our Situation which exposes us to these Ravages, against which, in my Judgement, no such Temporary Relief would possibly secure us. The great advantage the Enemy has, of Transporting Troops, by being Master of the Sea, will enable them to harrass us by Diversions of this kinds; and should we be tempted to pursue them upon every Alarm; The Army must either be so weaken'd as to expose it to Destruction, or a great part of the Coast be still left unprotected. Nor, indeed, does it appear to me, that such a pursuit would be attended with the least Effect; The first Notice of such an Incursion would be its actual Execution; and long before any Troops could reach the Scene of Action, the Enemy would have an Opportunity to accomplish their purpose and retire. It would give me great pleasure to have it in my power, to extend

47. The Massachusetts Legislature was often referred to as the general court. The resolve requesting Washington to detach troops to protect the eastern coast of the colony is dated July 29 and, in the writing of Horatio Gates, exists in copy form in the *Journals of the Continental Congress*, to whom it was inclosed in Washington's letter of August 4.

Protection and Safety to every Individual; but the wisdom of the General Court will anticipate me in the necessity of conducting our Operations on a General and impartial Scale, so as to exclude any first cause of Complaint and Jealousy.<sup>48</sup>

I beg, Sir, you will do me the Honor to Communicate these Sentiments to the General Court, and to apologize for my involuntary Delay. As we were alarm'd this Morning by the Enemy, and my Time taken up with giving the necessary Directions.

I shall be happy in every Opportunity of showing my very great Respect and Regard for the General Court of Massachusetts Bay, and am, Sir,

## **To THE COMMITTEE OF SAFETY OF NEW HAMPSHIRE**

Camp at Cambridge, August 4, 1775.

Gentn.: Your Public Capacity and the hope that you will be both able and willing to give us some Assistance, has led me to make this Application; The Situation of the Army as to Amunition is by no Means what it ought to be, we have great Reason to expect the Enemy very soon intend to bombard our Lines, and our Stock of Powder is so small, as

48. This letter may not have satisfied the general court, for the council (August 2) ordered Mr. Greenleaf, Mr. Winthrop, and Mr. Palmer to wait upon the General and “to request him to inform this Board of the extent of the powers delegated to him by the Honorable Continental Congress.”—*Ford*.

in a great Degree to make our heavy Artillery useless: I must therefore request you will exert yourselves to forward what ever can be spared from your Province as soon as Possible. The Necessity is great, the cause is of the last Importance; I am therefore persuaded I need use no Arguments to quicken your Zeal, The smallest Quantities are not beneath Notice, as a considerable Stock may be formed from various Collections; Lead and Flints are also very scarce, you will therefore furnish all you can spare. Next to making the Provisions, its being seasonable is of great Importance, every Hour in our present Situation is Critical.

Should there be any Arrivals in any Part of your Province with this Necessary Article, I must request you to forward all that can Possibly be spared out of it.

I am Gentn. very Respectfully, etc.

## **To GOVERNOR NICHOLAS COOKE**

Camp at Cambridge, August 4, 1775.



Sir: I am Yesterday favored with yours of the 31st July; We have yet no certain Accounts of the Fleet which Sail'd out of Boston the 25th; but if our Conjectures and Information are just we may expect to hear of it every Hour. I am now, Sir, in strict Confidence to acquaint you, that our Necessities in the Articles of Powder and Lead are so great as to require an immediate Supply.

I must earnestly intreat you will fall upon some Measure to forward every Pound of each in the Colony which can possibly be spared; It is not within the Propriety or Safety of such a Correspondence to say what I might on this Subject; It is sufficient that the Case calls loudly for the most strenuous Exertions of every friend of his Country and does not admit of the least delay. No Quantity, however Small, is beneath notice and should any arrive, I beg it may be forwarded as soon as Possible; But a Supply of this kind is so precarious, not only from the Danger of the Enemy, but the opportunity of Purchasing, that I have resolved in my mind every other possible chance and listned to every proposition on the subject which could give the smallest Hope; Among others I have had one mentioned which has some Weight with me, as well as the General Officers to whom I have proposed it, one Harris is lately come from Bermuda, where there is a very considerable Magazine of Powder in a remote Part of the Island and the Inhabitants well disposed not only to our Cause in General, but to assist in this Enterprize in particular; we understand there are two Armed Vessels in your Province commanded by Men<sup>52</sup> of known Activity and Spirit; one of which it is proposed to dispatch on this Errand, with such other assistance as may be required; Harris is to go along as the Conductor of the Enter prize and to avail ourselves of his knowledge of the Island, but without any Command. I am very

52. Capt. Abraham Whipple was the one who sailed to Bermuda.

sensible that at first view the project may appear hazardous and its Success must depend on the Concurrence of many Circumstances; but we are in a Situation which requires us to run all Risques. No Danger is to be considered when put in Competition with the Magnitude of the Cause and the Absolute Necessity we are under of increasing our Stock. Enterprises which appear Chimerical, often prove successful from that very Circumstance, Common Sense & Prudence will Suggest

Vigilance and care, when the Danger is Plain and obvious, but where little Danger is apprehended, the more the enemy is unprepared and consequently there is the fain'd Prospect of Success.<sup>53</sup>

Mr. Brown<sup>54</sup> has been mentioned to me as a very Proper Person to consult upon this Occasion you will judge of the Propriety of communicating it to him in Part or the whole, and as soon as possible, favor me with your Sentiments and the Steps you may have taken to forward it. If no immediate and safe Opportunity offers you will please to do it by Express. Should it be inconvenient to part with one of the armed Vessels, perhaps some other might be fitted out, or you could devise some other Mode of executing this Plan; so that in case of a Disappointment, the Vessel might proceed to some other Island to purchase. My last Letter from the Honorable Continental Congress, recommends my procuring from the Colonies of Connecticut and Rhode Island a Quantity of Tow Cloth, for the purpose of making of Indian or Hunting

53. See Washington's letter to the Inhabitants of the Island of Bermuda, Sept. 6, 1775, *post*.

54. Probably Nicholas Brown, a merchant and shipowner of Providence, R. I.

Shirts for the Men, many of whom are very destitute of Cloathing; A Pattern will be sent you and I must request you to give the Necessary Directions throughout your Government, that all the Cloth of the above Kind may be bought up for this use, and suitable Persons set to work to make it up. As soon as any Number is made worth the Conveyance, you will Please to direct them to be forwarded; It is designed as a Species of Uniform both cheap and convenient. We have had no Transactions in either Camp since my last but what are in the Public Papers and related with tolerable Accuracy. The Enemy still continue to strengthen their Lines and we have Reason to believe intend to bombard ours, with the Hopes of forcing us out of them, Our Poverty in Amunition prevents our making a suitable Return.

Since writing the above, Col. Porter<sup>55</sup> has undertaken to assist in the Matter, or to provide some suitable Person to accompany Harris to you, who will communicate all Circumstances to you. I am &c.

**To GOVERNOR JONATHAN TRUMBULL**

August 4, 1775.

Sir: I am favored with yours of the 31st July, informing me, that the New Levies<sup>56</sup> are coming forward with all expedition; As the Enemy has lain much longer inactive

55. Col. Elisha Porter.

than I expected, I hope they will arrive in Time to give us their Assistance.

My last Letter from the Honble. Continental Congress, recommends my procuring from the Colonies of Rhode Island and Connecticut, a Quantity of Tow Cloth, for the Purpose of making of Indian or Hunting Shirts for the Men, many of whom are destitute of Cloathing. A Pattern is herewith sent you; and I must request you, to give the necessary Directions throughout your Government, that all the Cloth of the above kind may be bought up for this Use, and suitable Persons set to work to make it up, As soon as any Number is made, worth the Conveyance, you will please to direct them to be forwarded. It is design'd as a Species of Uniform, both cheap and Convenient.

We have had no transactions of any Consequence in either Camp since my last, but what are in the Public Papers and related with tolerable Accuracy. I am now, Sir, in strict Confidence, to acquaint you that our Necessities, in the Article of Powder and Lead, are so great, as to require an immediate Supply. I must earnestly intreat you to fall upon some Measures to forward to us every ounce in the Province which can possibly be spared. It is not within the Propriety of such a Correspondence to say what I might upon this Subject; It is sufficient that the Case Calls loudly for the warmest and

most strenuous Exertions of every Friend to his Country, and does not admit of the least Delay; No Quantity

however small is beneath Notice and should any Arrive I beg it may be forwarded to us as fast as Possible.

The Express having left his Horse at Hartford, is under the Necessity of going that way. I am &c.

**To THE MASSACHUSETTS LEGISLATURE**

Head Quarters, August 5, 1775.

Sir: The bearer Col. Baldwin has this Morning reported, that among others out of Boston the Barrack Master's Wife came yesterday, and is now detained at Malden. As there may be Inconveniencies from Persons being suffered indiscriminately to go thro' the Country many of whom are undoubtedly disaffected to the Public Interest, I have caused a Court of Inquiry to set upon several; but the Business multiplies so fast, and we are so much Strangers to the Characters and Conduct of many, that I would wish to put it on some more proper Footing; especially as it takes several Field Officers every Day from their Duty. You will please Sir, to lay the Matter before the Genl. Court, that they may either appoint some proper Persons more competent to this Business, or take such other Steps as shall appear to them likely to remedy the Mischief; Col. Baldwin is referred to the General Court for Directions

respecting Mrs. Goldthwaite. I have the Honor to be, Sir,

**To JAMES WARREN**

Head Quarters, Cambridge, August 6, 1775.

Sir: I should be very glad to procure Mr. Hitchbourn's release agreeable to your favor of Yesterday, if I could think of any Mode in which it was practicable. To propose it on any other Footing than an Exchange, would I fear expose the application to contempt; as I observe he is included in the Note,

delivered me this Morning by a Committee from the Genl. Court, I apprehend it had best be left on that footing, and is the most likely to be successful.

It is very Surprizing, if the Letters intercepted are of Consequence, that those Gentlemen should act so imprudent a Part. If their suffering only affected themselves, I should not think it improper that they should feel a little for their Misconduct or Negligence. I am with much truth and regard, Sir etc.

### **To THE MASSACHUSETTS LEGISLATURE**

Head Quarters, August 7, 1775.

Sir: By the General Return made me for last Week, I find there are great Numbers of Soldiers and noncommissioned Officers who absent themselves from Duty, the greatest part of which, I have reason to believe are at their respective homes in different Parts of the Country; some employed by their Officers on their Farms and others draw in Pay from the Public, while they are working on their own Plantations or for Hire; My utmost Exertions have not been able to prevent this base and pernicious Conduct, I must therefore beg the Assistance of the General Court, to cooperate with me in such Measures as may remedy this Mischief; I am of opinion it might be done either wholly or in Part by the Committee's in the several Towns, making strict and impartial Inquiry of such as are found absent from the Army, upon what account they have left it by whose leave and for what Time; to require such as have no Impediment of Sickness or other good Reason to return to their Duty immediately, or in case of failure, to send an Account of their Names, the Company and Regiment to which they belong, to me as soon as possible, that I may be able to make Examples of such Delinquents.

I need not enlarge upon the ruinous Consequences of suffering such infamous Deserters and Defrauders of the Public, to go unnoticed or unpunished; nor use any Arguments to induce the General Court to give it

immediate attention:—the Necessity of the case does not permit me to doubt the continued Exertions of that Zeal which has distinguished the General Court, upon less important Occasions. I have the Honor to be, etc.

P. S the inclosed respects a Prisoner sent up from Prospect Hill, who is sent herewith under Guard for Examination of the Comtee. appointed for that Purpose.

### **To THE NEW YORK LEGISLATURE**

Camp at Cambridge, August 8, 1775.

Gentn: It must give great concern to any Considerate Mind, that, when this whole Continent, at a vast Expense of Blood and Treasure, is endeavouring to Establish Liberties on the most secure and Solid Foundations, not only by a laudable Opposition of Force to Force, but denying itself the usual advantages of Trade; there are men among us so basely sordid as to Counteract all our Exertions, for the sake of a little Gain. You cannot but have heard that the Distresses of the Ministerial Troops, for fresh Provisions and many other Necessaries, at Boston, were very great; It is a Policy, Justifiable by all the Laws of War, to endeavour to increase them; Desertions,

Discouragement, and a Dissatisfaction with the Service, besides weakening their strength, are some of the Natural Consequences of such a Situation; and, if continued, might afford the fairest Hope of Success, without further Effusion of human Blood. A vessel cleared lately out of New York for St. Croix, with fresh Provisions and other Articles, has just gone into Boston, instead of pursuing her Voyage to the West Indies; I have endeavoured to discover the Name of the Captain or Owner, but, as yet, without success; The Owner (it is said) went to St. Croix before the Vessel, from which and her late arrival, I make no doubt you will be able to discover and expose the Villain. And, if you could fall upon some effectual Measures, to prevent the like in future, it would be doing a Signal Service to our Common Country.<sup>74</sup>

I have been endeavouring, by every means in my Power, to discover the future Intentions of our Enemy here<sup>75</sup> I find a General Idea prevailing thro' the Army and in the Town of Boston, that the Troops are soon to leave the Town and go to some other Part of the Continent. New York is the Place generally mentioned as their Destination. I should think a Rumour or Suggestion of this kind worthy of very little Notice, if it was not confirmed by some corresponding Circumstances. But a four Weeks total Inactivity, with all their Reinforcements arrived and recruited; the daily Diminution, by

74. The New York Legislature referred the matter to a committee, and on August 25 Johan Chr. Drewidz was arrested on suspicion.

75. In Washington's "Accounts" in the *Washington Papers*, there is the following entry: "1775, July 15. To 333# Dollars given to — to induce him to go into the Town of Boston; to establish a secret correspondence for the purpose of conveying intelligence of the Enemys movements and designs."

Desertions, Sickness and small Skirmishes, induce an Opinion, that any Effort they propose to make, will be directed elsewhere.

I thought it proper just to hint to you what is probably intended; you will then consider what Regard is to be paid to it, and what steps will be proper for you to take, if any. I am, with great Respect & Regard, etc.

**To GOVERNOR JONATHAN TRUMBULL**

August 9, 1775.

Sir: From some late Intelligence out of Boston and sundry corroborating Circumstances, there is great Reason to suspect that the Ministerial Troops intend, either to make a Diversion to the Southward, or wholly to remove; If they should do either, it is most Probable New York is the Place of their Destination, I therefore think it most advisable that the Troops of your Colony, who have

not yet Marched, or may easily be recalled, should wait further Orders; You will therefore Sir, be pleased to give the Necessary Directions for the purpose as soon as Possible.

No occurrences in the Camp of any Consequence since I had the pleasure of addressing you last. I am with due Regard &c.

### **To THE NEW YORK LEGISLATURE**

Camp at Cambridge, August 10, 1775.

Sir: Your favor of the 2d Inst. is duly received, but

it is out of my power to Comply with the Request it contains, of forwarding Commissions. All that I have yet received from the Honble. Continental Congress are far short of the Number required in this Army; for which Reason when at New York and by Letter from this I directed General Schuyler to apply to the Congress at Philadelphia for those of his Department as the Shortest and easiest Mode; To which I must also now refer you.

We have had no Occurrence in the Camp for several Days worthy Notice;—but by some Advices from Boston and several Concurring Circumstances, we have great Reason to Suspect a Part or the whole of the Ministerial Troops are about to remove; New York is the Place generally talk'd of as their Destination, I give you the Intelligence as it came to me, but do not vouch for its Authenticity.

I am with the most respectful Regards to yourself and the Body over whom you preside, Sir, Yours, etc.

### **To THE COMMITTEE OF THE MASSACHUSETTS LEGISLATURE**

Camp at Cambridge, August 11, 1775.

I have considered the papers you left with me Yesterday; those of which relate to Jones,<sup>79</sup> shew him to be a malignant and inveterate Enemy to his Country, and I trust



79. Ichabod Jones.

he will meet with his Deserts, but I have such various and important Matters requiring my constant attention, that I must beg leave to refer him and all others under similar Circumstances to the Authority of the Province for Punishment and safe Custody.

The payment of the Troops is of such indispensable Necessity, that I must endeavour to use those Powers committed to me by the Honble. Congress, to remove this cause of Complaint: I propose to direct the New Paymaster to commence his Payments from the 1st August and hereafter continue them Monthly; I have consider'd that there are few if any Men who have not served Two Months and tho' some have received their Advance twice, it cannot be supposed there are many who have had it. The two Months Service will then be set against the double advance, and if a strict Scrutiny is immediately made, which I would recommend, the Accounts may be settled to that time, the Delinquents probably be detected and in the end justice be done both to the Province and the Men.

If any Embezzlements have been made by the officers, they will stand accountable to the Public, but at all Events the Soldiers are entitled to and must have their Pay if any service is expected from them. The Shirts, Shoes, Breeches and Stockings, Provided by the Province can be taken on the Continental Account: but I apprehend

there will not be the same Necessity to provide Coats; the Continental Congress having ordered Hunting Shirts, as an outside Dress and warm waistcoats under will be Cheaper and more convenient. As to the Expedition proposed against Nova Scotia by the Inhabitants of Machias, I cannot but applaud their Spirit and Zeal; but, after considering the Reasons offered for it, there are Several objections occur, which seem to me unanswerable.<sup>80</sup> I apprehend such an Enterprize inconsistent with the General Principal upon which the Colonies have proceeded. That Province has not acceded, it is true, to the Measures of Congress; and, therefore, they have been excluded from all Commercial Intercourse with the other Colonies; But they have not Commenced Hostilities against them, nor are any to be apprehended. To attack them, therefore, is a Measure of Conquest, rather than Defence; and may be attended with very dangerous Consequences. It might, perhaps,

be easy, with the Force proposed, to make an Incursion into the Province and overawe those of the Inhabitants who are Inimical to our cause; and, for a short time prevent the Supplying the Enemy with Provisions: but the same Force must Continue to produce any lasting Effects. As to the furnishing Vessels of Force, you, Gentn. will anticipate me, in pointing out our weakness and the Enemy's Strength at Sea. There would be great Danger that, with the best preparation we could make, they would fall an easy prey either to the Men of War on that Station,

80. Colonel Thompson had proposed to raise a force of 1,000 men, and a fleet of four armed vessels and eight transports; to proceed to Windsor, captivate the Tories, make all the proselytes possible; and then proceed to Halifax and destroy the King's dockyard, if thought proper.— *Ford*.

or some who would be detach'd from Boston. I have been thus particular, to satisfy any Gentlemen of the Court who should incline to adopt the Measure, I could offer many other Reasons against, some of which, I doubt not, will suggest themselves to the Honble. Board.—But it is unnecessary to enumerate them when our Situation as to Ammunition, absolutely forbids our sending a single ounce out of the Camp at Present. I am, Gentn., &c.<sup>81</sup>

## **To THE MASSACHUSETTS LEGISLATURE**

Cambridge Head Quarters, August 14, 1775.

Sir: His Excellency being obliged to attend some Business in the Lines, has directed me to acquaint you and the Honble. Court, that he has received an Answer from Genl. Gage which has determined him to order the officers now at Watertown, together with those from Cape Ann, to be confined in Northampton Goal. Genl. Gage is resolved to know no distinction of Rank among our Prisoners in his Hands, which obliges Genl. Washington (very contrary to his disposition) to observe the same Rule of Treatment to those Gentlemen, to whom it may be proper to explain the Reasons of a Conduct, which otherwise may appear harsh and cruel.—The Common Men, the General Court will order to such Places as they think proper.

81. The letter sent, dated Aug. 12, 1775, in the writing of Joseph Reed, is in the archives of the American Antiquarian Society.

I have by the Generals direction also inclosed you the Letter from Cape Ann;—he would gladly give them the desired Assistance; but you are no Strangers to the State of our Ammunition. We have Reason to expect some Speedy Supplies, and when any can be spared from the Necessary use of the Army with propriety, it will doubtless be done; In the mean Time, his Excellency refers them to the General Court for the Direction and Advice they Request. I have the Honor, etc., Joseph Reed.

**To GOVERNOR JONATHAN TRUMBULL**

Camp at Cambridge, August 14, 1775.

Sir: Your Favor's of the 7th, 8th and 12th Inst. are all received. The Detention of the New Raised Levies has happily coincided with my Intentions respecting them. In the present uncertainty I think it best they should Continue where they are and I hope their Officers will be Assiduous in disciplining and improving them in the use of their Arms.

Upon the Subject of Powder I am at a Loss what to say—our Necessities are so great and it is of such Importance that this Army should have a full Supply, that nothing but the most urgent and pressing Exigence could make it proper to detain any on its way—I have been informed

that 15 Hhds were lately landed at New York and that further Supplies were daily expected both there and at Connecticut; Should there be any Arrivals, I beg no time may be lost in forwarding this from Hartford and what can be spared from the necessary Colony Stock. Indeed at present I should choose you to forward one of these Waggons and the other may remain where it is till we see the Issue of our Expectations on this Head. The Removal from Boston I consider as very precarious, by no Means deserving to have so much Stress laid on it. We begin to feel a Scarcity of Lead and as I do not learn that we are to expect any from the Southward. I have concluded that a Part of the Stock found at Ticonderoga should be brought down and for this Purpose have wrote to

Genl. Schuyler. I am not sufficiently Master of the Geography of the Country to know the easiest Mode of Conveyance; but from the Time in which Letters have come thro' your Hands, I apprehend thro' Connecticut must be the best and most expeditious. You will therefore be pleased to give us your Assistance, and take the Direction of this Matter, into your own Hands to which I have not the least doubt, you will attend, as well to the Expencc, as other Circumstances conducive to the Public Service.

Nothing new in the Camp for several days past, five Deserters have come in within these 48 Hours, but they bring no Intelligence of any Consequence. Since writing the above I have been informed there is a Lead Mine in your Colony which may be work'd to Advantage. Cut off from all foreign Supplies every internal Resource is worthy of attention and I make no doubt if my Information is just some proper Steps may be taken to hire this to the Public Advantage. I am Sir &c.

**To GOVERNOR NICHOLAS COOKE**

August 14, 1775.

Sir: Your Favors of the 8th & 11th Instant, are duly received; the former, I laid before the General Court of this Province, but one of the Delegates having communicated to them what Mr. Ward did to you, of the proceedings of the Continental Congress touching this Powder, nothing was done towards the providing of Specie, that the Vessel might proceed to other Places in case of a Disappointment at the first. I am of Opinion that the Collection of any considerable Sum here, would be difficult in the Time proposed and I think there is the less Necessity for it, as there are few Colonies who have not some Vessel out on this Errand, and will probably bring all that is at Market. Having conversed with Col Porter and farther considered the Matter, I am of Opinion, it ought to be prosecuted on the Single Footing of procuring what is in the Magazine; The Voyage is short, our Necessity is great, the Expectation of being Supplied by the Inhabitants of the Island

under such Hazards as they must run is slender, so that the only Chance of Success is by a sudden stroke. There is a great Difference between acquiescing in the Measure and becoming Principals,

the former we have great Reason to expect the latter is doubtful, The Powder by all our Information is public Property, so that as you observe it may be settled with our other Accounts. The draughting of Men from hence would be very difficult and endanger a Discovery of the scheme; I am not clear that I have Power to send them off the Continent and to engage them as Volunteers, it would be necessary to make their Destination known; I should suppose the Captain who is to have the Direction of this Enterprize, would rather choose to have Men whom he knew and in whom he could confide, in Preference to Strangers. From what Col Porter informs me I do not see that Harris's Presence is absolutely necessary, and as his Terms would add Considerably to the Expence, after obtaining from him all the Intelligence he could give, his attendance might be dispensed with. The Vessel lately sent out to cruise for the Powder, seems to me the properest for this Voyage, and as the Ten Days will soon be out, if no objection occurs to you she might be dispatch'd.

I have given Directions respecting the Lead at Ticonderoga, which I am of opinion with you is the surest Mode of Supply in that Article.

I have sent by this Opportunity a hunting Shirt, as a Pattern. I should be glad you would inform me of the Number you think I may expect.

I had flattered myself, that the Vigilance of the Inhabitants on the Islands and Coasts would have disappointed the Enemy in their late Expedition after live Stock.—I hope nothing will be omitted by the several Committees and other Persons to guard against any future attempts, by removing all the Stock from these Places, where their Shipping can protect them in plundering. I do assure you Sir, that it would be rendering a most essential Service to the Public Interest, their Distresses before were very great, and if renewed after their present supply is exhausted, must be productive of very great advantages.<sup>96</sup> I am Sir &c.

9. General Gage wrote to the minister (August 17) that the ships had collected and brought in 1,300 sheep and 100 oxen—a very seasonable supply. “We owe it,” Burgoyne wrote to Lord George Germain, “to the transports arrived and sent out by General Gage, and not to any assistance from the fleet.” The complaints against Admiral Graves, the commander of the fleet, were loud and

general. Burgoyne ridiculed his inactivity and “Quaker-like scruples”; W. Eden spoke of him as “a corrupt admiral without any shadow of capacity”; and as early as July 28, the King wrote to Lord North: “I do think the Admiral's removal as necessary, if what is reported is founded, as the mild General's” (Gage). Captain Montague, who served under Graves, and was a prejudiced witness, wrote to the Earl of Dunmore (August 9): “The G—I and A—I on bad terms, the latter universally despised, his character prostituted in the basest manner, totally ignorant of the business he is employed on; he only turns his mind to find out ways of promoting his nephews.”— *Ford*.

### **To THE MASSACHUSETTS LEGISLATURE**

August 23, 1775.

Sir: In a Conference with which I was lately honored from the General Court, I was informed that a Quantity of Shirts, Breeches, Stockings and Shoes had been provided by the Committee of Supplies; As there are Numbers of the Army destitute of these Articles. I should be glad the General Court would order them to be delivered to the Quarter Master General and to hasten those which are in Hand. He has orders to receive them on the Continental Account. I am Sir &ca.

### **To GOVERNOR JONATHAN TRUMBULL**

Camp at Cambridge, August 23, 1775.

Sir: Yesterday I received advice from Boston, that a Number of Transports have Sailed on a Second Expedition for fresh Provisions; As they met with such Success before, it is probable they may pursue the same Course, only Advancing farther; We think Montawck Point on Long Island, a very probable Place of their Landing; I have therefore thought it best to give you the earliest Intelligence; But I do not mean to confine your Attention or Vigilance to that Place; you will please to extend your Views as far as the

Mischief may be probably intended.

We have no Transactions of Sufficient Consequence in the Camp to make a Part of a Letter. I am Sir, etc.

P.S. You will please to let me know in your next, what Progress you make with the Hunting Shirts.

**To THE MASSACHUSETTS LEGISLATURE**

August 29, 1775.

Gentn.: The Quarter Master General of the Army has represented to me that notwithstanding he has offered 2/ pr Foot for Fire Wood, 2/1½ pr Bushel for Oats, ¾ pr Ct for Hay, he cannot procure those Articles for the use of the Army. From the information I have received, I have great Reason to believe, that this is an Artificial Scarcity, partly created by some persons who are monopolizing those Articles, in order

to advance the Price and partly by the Possessors of them in the Neighbourhood of the Camp, who keep them in Order to profit by our Distress. As such a Combination must be attended with fatal Consequences both to the Country and Army, I cannot doubt the Interposition of your Honors to provide some Speedy and effectual Remedy; That which is usual and Customary in such Cases, is to fix the Prices to the Several Articles; bearing a Proportion to what is the Ordinary Rate, and if Persons will not Comply with a reasonable Tariff, but still refuse to furnish such Necessary Articles, the great Law of Self Preservation must authorize us to compel them. This or any other Regulations, which your knowledge of the People and Zeal for the Service shall induce you to make, will I doubt not remove the Mischief at present, and prevent it in future. If you should at the same Time extend your Views to other Articles besides those I have enumerated, I flatter myself it would have a very beneficial Effect. I am &c.

**To THE NEW YORK LEGISLATURE**

Camp at Cambridge, August 30, 1775.

Sir: Your favor of the 21<sup>st</sup> Instant is duly received, inclosing Mr. Carters Information of the Capture of the Charming Sally; which from the Circumstances attending

it, was undoubtedly collusive. I have received Advice that another Vessel belonging to one White at Marblehead; whose ostensible Voyage was to Casco Bay, was carried in soon after. Such Instances of Avarice at such a time and in such a Cause, call for a Severe Scrutiny and exemplary Punishment.

Mr. Livingston and some other Gentlemen from your City, brought us the acceptable News of the safe Arrival of a large Quantity of Powder and 500 stand of Arms. Our Situation is such, as requires your immediate Assistance and Supply in that Article. We have lately taken Possession of a Hill considerably advanced towards the Enemy, but our Poverty prevents our availing ourselves of any Advantage of Situation. I must therefore most earnestly intreat, that Measures may be taken to forward to this Camp, in the most safe and expeditious Manner whatever Amunition can be spared from the immediate and Necessary Defence of the Province. The Value, of whatever may be sent in Consequence of this Request, will be paid by orders from hence when Delivered, or negotiated with the Honble. Continental Congress at Philadelphia, as may be agreed with the proprietors; I only request that no time may be lost thro' any such Difficulties, as our Situation is so Critical and the Exigence so great. The Mode of Conveyance I must leave with the Provincial Congress, or the Committee of the City; I doubt not they will take every Precaution to make it safe and Expeditious.

I have the Honor to be Sir, etc.

**To GOVERNOR NICHOLAS COOKE**

Camp at Cambridge, August 31, 1775.

Sir: Last night I received Information, that Messrs. Clark and Nightingale of Providence had imported a Quantity of Gun Powder, Lead and 500 Stand of Arms; upon which I have dispatch'd Capt. Baylor one of my Aids de Camp to treat with those Gentlemen for the whole Importation if not otherwise disposed of; I have directed him to wait on you immediately on his Arrival and must



beg the Favor of your Advice and Assistance both in negotiating the Purchase, and transporting it hither, in the cheapest safest and most expeditious Manner; I flatter myself those Gentn. will not take an undue advantage of the Distresses of their Country, so as to exact an unreasonable Price; and that a due Regard will be had to the very particular Necessities of this Army, so as to prevent as far as Possible, any Part of this Supply being diverted to other uses.—As I have the most perfect Confidence in your Attachment and Zeal for the Public Interest, I am persuaded you will use your utmost Influence

to give Effect to Capt. Baylors Commission; To him I must beg leave to refer you for the News of the Camp. In your next, you will please to inform me, what Progress you make with the Hunting Shirts. With much Respect and Esteem, Sir Your &ca.

**To CLARK & NIGHTINGALE**

Camp at Cambridge, August 31, 1775.

Gentn: Hearing that you have imported a Quantity of Powder Lead and Small Arms, I have Dispatched Captain Baylor<sup>23</sup> one of my Aids de Camp to treat with you for it; whatever Engagement he shall enter into for the whole or any Part, I will Confirm; And upon Delivery to him, your Bills drawn on me for the Price agreed on, shall be honored on the Shortest Notice. I am Gentn. Your etc.

23. Capt. George Baylor.

**To GOVERNOR JONATHAN TRUMBULL**

Camp at Cambridge, September 2, 1775.

Sir: I am to acknowledge the Receipt of your Favor of the 21st. Ulto. with the Inclosures; By my last Letter from Ticonderoga I expect a Quantity of Lead will be forwarded soon to your care from thence, I am glad there are such Prospects of a Supply of that Article, from the Mines in your

Colony; I make no doubt they will receive such Encouragement both public and private, as their Importance and Value Demand.

By the Time you receive this Letter you will be able to judge with some Certainty, whether the Fleet which saild last from Boston was destined for your Coast; If it is not yet arrived we may conclude it has sail'd to the Eastward, if it has arrived the Issue will be known immediately; so that in either case, the Continuance of the New raised Levies along the Coast is unnecessary; You will therefore on the Receipt of this be pleased to order them to March immediately to this Camp, directing the Commanding Officer at the same Time to give me 2 or 3 days Notice of the Time, in which the Troops will arrive, that suitable accomodations may be prepared.

Their Presence is the more necessary, as I may in Confidence inform you that I am about to detach 1000 or 1200 Men on an Expedition into Canada, by way of Kenebeck River, from which I have the greatest Reason to expect either that Quebec will fall into our Hands a very easy Prey, or such a Diversion made as will open a very easy passage to Genl. Schuyler.

We are now so well secured in our late Advanced Post on the Hill, that the Enemy have discontinued their Cannonade, the Men continue in good Health and Spirits. I am with much Regard etc.

## **To THE MASSACHUSETTS LEGISLATURE**

Camp at Cambridge, September 4, 1775.

Gentn: Col. Sergeant<sup>39</sup> has applied to me for his Commission in the Continental Army, and I have no objection to Comply with his request, but his not having received one under the Legislature of this Province; But as I do not mean to confine myself to Forms, if he has been considered by this Government, as an Officer authorised to Raise a Regiment

39. Paul Dudley Sargent.

and would have received a Commission on the Provincial Establishment, and you will signify this to me for my Government and Security, I shall make no Difficulty to grant a Commission to him, on the same Terms as are prescribed to the other officers. I am Gentn. most Respectfully

**To GOVERNOR NICHOLAS COOKE**

Camp at Cambridge, September 6, 1775.

Sir: Your Favor of the 30th August and 2d Inst. are duly received; The Concurrence of the Committee in the Bermuda Voyage is very agreeable and I hope will prove a happy Earnest of its Success; Inclosed is a Letter to the Inhabitants of that Island of the tenor you have Suggested; but I shall depend upon Capt. Whipple's not making use of it, except in Case of real Necessity.

I am to acknowledge your kind assistance to Capt. Bayler in his late Errand, and must desire you to make known to Messrs. Clark & Nightingale, that i am very sensible of the Patriotic and disinterested Part they have acted on this Occasion.

As the Congress will depend on a Supply of Tow Cloth from your Colony, unless they are apprized to the Contrary, I apprehend it will be proper through your Deligates, to acquaint them, of the State in which you have found that Article, in order to guard against a Disappointment.

The Removal of the Stock from the Coast and Islands, will I hope have its Effect, in sending the Minesterial Plunderers empty home. We have yet no Accounts of the last Fleet, except 6 who return'd from Louisburgh with Coal, a few Days ago.

I need not mention to you the vast Importance of gaining Intelligence of the Enemy's Motions and Designs as early as possible; The great saving to the Continent both of Blood and Money; a Detection of our secret and most Dangerous Enemies, with innumerable other Advantages, would result from the Interception of their Correspondence at this Juncture; I have therefore thought Proper, to propose to you the Seizing the Mail by the next Packet; She is Hourly expected from

England; her Force of Men and Guns inconsiderable; none but Swivels and only mann'd with 18 Men.

If the Vessel proposed to go to Bermuda should cruize for a few Days off Sandy Hook, I have no Doubt she would fall in with her; In which Case she might with little or no Delay land the Mail, in order to be forwarded to me and proceed on her Voyage; But if there are any material objections to this Mode, I am still so anxious upon the Subject, that I would have it tried with another Vessel at the Continental Expence and will for that end direct, that any charge which may accrue in this Service, shall be paid by the Paymaster here, upon being duly liquidated.

It will be necessary that some person well acquainted with the Packets should be on Board our Vessel, or the Stopping in ward bound Vessels indiscriminately will give the Alarm and she may be apprised of her Danger; The choice of a proper Officer with the care of providing a suitable Vessel &c. I must leave to you. should it meet with the desired Success there can be no doubt the Honble. Continental Congress will distinguish and Reward the officer and men who shall have done so essential a Service; nor shall I fail in making known to them how much the Public Service is indebted to you for your Zeal and Activity on all occasions.<sup>44</sup> I am Sir &ca.

### **To THE INHABITANTS OF THE ISLAND OF BERMUDA**

Camp at Cambridge 3 Miles from Boston, September 6, 1775.

Gentn: [In the great Conflict, which agitates this Continent, I cannot doubt but the Assertors of Freedom and the Rights of the Constitution, are possessed of your most favorable Regards and Wishes for Success. As Descendents of Freemen and Heirs with us of the same Glorious Inheritance, we flatter ourselves that tho' divided by our Situation, we are firmly united in Sentiment; the Cause of Virtue and Liberty is Confined to no Continent or Climate, it comprehends within its capacious Limits, the Wise and good, however dispersed and seperated in Space or distance.] You need not be informed, that Violence and Rapacity

44. Captain Whipple accordingly cruised off New York for some days until he learned that the mail packet had safely reached that city, when he laid his course for Bermuda. Meanwhile Washington had heard that the powder in that island had been removed by Gage, and a vessel was sent to intercept Whipple's useless voyage but missed him.

of a tyrannick Ministry, have forced the Citizens of America, your Brother Colonists, into Arms; We equally detest and lament the Prevalence of those Councils, which have led to the Effusion of so much human Blood and left us no Alternative but a Civil War or a base Submission. The wise disposer of all Events has hitherto smiled upon our virtuous Efforts; Those Mercenary Troops, a few of whom lately boasted of Subjugating this vast Continent, have been check'd in their earliest Ravages and are now actually encircled in a small Space; their Arms disgraced, and Suffering all the Calamities of a Siege. The Virtue, Spirit, and Union of the Provinces leave them nothing to fear, but the Want of Amunition, The applications of our Enemies to foreign States and their Vigilance upon our Coasts, are the only Efforts they have made against us with Success. Under those Circumstances, and with these Sentiments we have turned our Eyes to you Gentlemen for Relief, We are informed there is a very large Magazine in your Island under a very feeble Guard; We would not wish to involve you in an Opposition, in which from your Situation, we should be unable to support you:—We knew not therefore to what Extent to solicit your Assistance in availing ourselves of this Supply;—but if your Favor and Friendship to North America and its Liberties have not been misrepresented, I persuade myself you may, consistent with your own Safety, promote and further this Scheme,

so as to give it the fairest prospect of Success. Be assured, that in this Case, the whole Power and Execution of my Influence will be made with the Honble. Continental Congress, that your Island may not only be Supplied with Provisions, but experience every other Mark of Affection and Friendship, which the grateful Citizens of a free Country can bestow on its Brethren and Benefactors. I am &c.<sup>43</sup>

43. There is no draft of this address to the Bermuda inhabitants in the *Washington Papers*. The copy of it there was made by George Taylor, jr., one of Varick's writers, in 1781. (See Washington's letter to Gov. Nicholas Cooke, August 4, 1775, *ante*.) Capt. Abraham Whipple, of Rhode Island, sailed for Bermuda. He arrived too late, as Gage had already removed the powder.

**To GOVERNOR JONATHAN TRUMBULL**

Camp at Cambridge, September 8, 1775.

Sir: Upon the receipt of this you will please to give directions, that all the New Levies march immediately to this Camp. By a Resolution of Congress the Troops on the Continental Establishment, were not to be employed for the Defence of the Coasts, or of any particular Province, the Militia being deemed competent to that Service.

When I directed these Troops to remain in their own Province, I had some reason to expect a Remove from Boston to New York, in which case they would have been able to give them more speedy opposition, But as that Suspicion now appears groundless, there will be an Impropriety in continuing them where they now are, consistent with the above Resolve.

The Detachment which I mentioned in my last, will March in 2 Days and I shall have Occasion for the Troops from you to fill their Places; The Ministerial Expedition must I apprehend by this Time have come to some Issue, they are either returned with Disappointment, or have succeeded on their Errand; in either case the Men can be spared without danger to the Country; but should this not be the Case and they are still hovering on the Coast, it is to make no difference in their March; so that I shall at all events expect them here next Week, for which you will please to give the Necessary Orders. I am &c.

**To GOVERNOR JONATHAN TRUMBULL**

September 9, 1775.

Sir: Your favor of the 6th. Instant is now before me. Our State of Amunition disables us from availing ourselves of our present Stations as I would wish to do, and requires every Assistance that can be given it:—You will therefore

on the receipt of this be pleased to forward whatever can be spared from the Necessities of the Colony, and the more Expedition you can use, the more acceptable it will be. I am Sir, etc.

**To GOVERNOR NICHOLAS COOKE**

September 18, 1775.

Sir: Your Favors of the 9th, 14th and 15 Insts. have been duly received; The Readiness of the Committee to cooperate with me in procuring the most authentic Intelligence and dispatching Capt. Whipple for this Purpose, is peculiarly satisfactory and I flatter myself will be attended, not only with Success, but the happiest Consequences to the Public Cause, I should immediately have sent you Notice of the Paragraph in the Philadelphia Papers, which is all the Acct. I have of the taking the Powder at Bermudas; But I supposed it must have come to your Hands before it reached ours. I am inclin'd to think it Sufficient to suspend Capt. Whipple's Voyage at least till farther Intelligence is procured from Philadelphia, as it is scarce supposeable these Vessels would leave any Quantity behind worth the Risque and Expence of such a Voyage; As the Enterprize will therefore most Probably be laid aside for the present, it may be proper for Capt. Whipple to keep his Station a few days

longer for the Packet; It must be remembered they generally have long Passages, and we are very sure she has not yet arrived at Boston, nor do I find she is expected there, the Voyage to Bayonne, is what I should approve and recommend; The Person sent to Governor Trumbull has not yet called on me; but the scheme appears so feasible, that I should be glad to see it executed.

At the same Time I must add that I am in some Doubt as to the Extent of my Powers to appropriate the Public Monies here to this Purpose. I could wish you would communicate it to the Congress, of which you will have sufficient Time and I make no Doubt of their Concurrence; In fact the State of

our Treasury here is so low, that it would be impracticable to be of any Service to the Expedition, if all the objections were obviated. We have no News either in the Camp or from Boston, except a piece of Intelligence from the latter, that the Enemy are pulling down the South End of the Town in order to continue a Work across from River to River.

Your chearful concurrence with me in Public Measures and Zeal for the Service calls for my best thanks;—You will please to accept them, and believe me to be with much Truth and Esteem, etc.

P S No Southern Mail arriving last Saturday, we are apprehensive it has again fallen into the Enemy's Hands; If it was not attended with too much Trouble, should be glad you would cause Inquiry

to be made; if by any Accident the Letters are at Providence you will please to forward them by Express.

**To CLARK & NIGHTINGALE**

Camp at Cambridge, September 19, 1775.

Whereas the Necessities of the Army under my Command for Amunition are so great as to require all Possible Supplies, and Messrs. Clark & Nightingale Merchants of Providence, having represented to me, that they will at their own Risque, undertake to procure from the West Indies or elsewhere, such Quantities as may be purchased, provided they obtain my Person mission for this Purpose, I do therefore hereby make known to all Committees and other Persons whatsoever, that the Voyage now proposed by the Sloop Fly and the Sloop Neptune are for the above purpose and undertaken with my Privy and approbation under such Restrictions and Engagements, as the Honorable Govt. Cooke of Rhode Island shall think proper, to prevent the same from being perverted to any other Purpose than that above Specified. And I do recommend it to all Committees and other Persons, not only to forbear molesting or intercepting them on the Voyage aforesaid, but to give them all Assistance and Countenance in their Power.



## To GOVERNOR JONATHAN TRUMBULL

September 21, 1775.

It gives me real concern to observe yours of the 15th Inst.<sup>54</sup> that you should think it Necessary to distinguish between my Personal and Public Character and confine your Esteem to the former.

Upon a Reperusal of mine of the 8th Inst., I cannot think the construction you have made on [ *sic* ] and unless it was, I should have hoped the Respect I really have, and which, I flattered myself, I had manifested to you, would have called for the most favorable, in the Disposition of the Continental Troops. I have long been sensible that it would be impossible to please, not Individuals merely, but particular Provinces, whose Partial Necessities would occasionally call for Assistance; I, therefore, thought myself happy, that the Congress had settled the Point, and apprehended I should stand excused to all, for acting in the Line which not only appeared to me to be that of Policy and Propriety, but of express and positive Duty; If, to the other Fatigues and Cares of my Station, that is to be added of giving Reasons for all Orders, and explaining the grounds and Principles on which they are formed; my Personal Trouble will perhaps, be of the least Concern, the Public will be most affected.

You may be assured, Sir, nothing was intended that might be construed into Disrespect; and at so interesting a Period, nothing less ought to disturb the Harmony so Necessary for the happy success of our Public operations, the Omission of acknowledging

54. Trumbull had written: "I am surprised that mine of the 5th instant was not received, or not judged worthy of Notice, as no mention is made of it. Stonington had been Attacked, and severely cannonaded, and by divine Providence marvelously protected. New London and Norwich are still menaced by the Ministerial Ships and Troops, that the militia cannot be thought sufficient for their security. That tis necessary to cast up some Entrenchments. We are obliged actually to raise more Men for their Security, and for the Towns of New Haven and Lyme. I hoped some of the new Levies might have been left here, till these dangers were over, without injury to any of your

Operations. I own that must be left to your Judgment. Yet it would have given me pleasure to have been acquainted that you did consider it. I thank Divine Providence and you for this early warning to great care and watchfulness, that so the Union of the Colonies may be settled on a permanent and happy Basis...

“You may depend on our utmost Exertions for the defence and security of the Constitutional Rights and Liberty of the Colonies, and of our own in particular. None have shown greater forwardness, and thereby rendered themselves more the Object of Ministerial Vengeance. I am, with great Esteem and Regard for your personal Character,” etc. The *Glasgow* and *Rose* were at Newport waiting, Trumbull thought, for the return of the *Swan* from Boston, when they would attack New London and Stonington: “All the Regiments in the Colony, at a great Expence have been extraordinarily disciplined, And one quarter of them, on the Sea Coasts are selected, equiped and held in readiness as Minute Men for every Emergency”

Trumbull's letter, dated Sept. 15, 1775, is in the *Washington Papers*.

in precise Terms, the Receipt of your Favor of the 5th Inst. was purely accidental.

The subject was not so new to me as to require long Consideration; I had occasion fully to deliberate upon it in Consequence of applications for Troops from Cape Ann, Machias, New Hampshire, and Long Island, where the same Necessity was as strongly pleaded, and, in the two last Instances, the most peremptory Orders necessary, to prevent the Troops from being detained; I foresaw the same Difficulty here. I am by no Means insensible to the situation of the People on the Coast; I wish I could extend Protection to all; but the numerous Detachments, necessary to remedy the Evil, would amount to a Dissolution of the Army, or make the most important Operations of the Campaign depend upon the Piratical Expeditions of 2 or 3 Men of War and Transports.

The Spirit and Zeal of the Colony of Connecticut is unquestionable; and whatever may be the Hostile Intentions of the Men of War, I hope their utmost Efforts can do little more than alarm the Coast. I am, with great Esteem and Regard, for both your Personal and Public Character, sir, etc.<sup>55</sup>

## **To THE COMMITTEE OF SAFETY OF HARTFORD, CONNECTICUT**

September 26, 1775.

55. In reply Governor Trumbull wrote (October 9): "I have no disposition to increase the weight of your burdens, which, in the multiplicity of your business, must be sufficiently heavy, nor inclination to disturb the harmony so necessary to the happy success of our public operations. I am persuaded no such difficulty will any more happen. It is unhappy, that jealousies should be excited, or disputes of any sort litigated, between any of the colonies, to disunite them at a time, when our liberty, our property, our all is at stake. If our enemies prevail, which our disunion may occasion, our jealousies will then appear frivolous, and all our disputed claims of no value to either side."

Your Favor of the 18th Instant and one from Major French on the same Subject have come safely to Hand. From the General Character of this Gentleman, and the acknowledged Politeness and Attention of the Committee of Hartford to the Gentlemen intrusted to their Care, I flatter'd myself, their would have been a Mutual Emulation of Civility, which would have resulted in the Ease and Convenience of both; I am extremely sorry to find it otherwise, And upon a Reperusal of former Letters and Papers, respecting these Gentlemen, cannot think there is any thing particular in their Situation, which can Challenge a Distinction. If the Circumstance of wearing their Swords had created no Dissatisfaction, I should not have interfered, considering it, in itself, as a Matter of Indifference; But, as it has become so, partly, perhaps, by the inadvertent Expressions which have dropt on this Occasion, I persuade myself, Major French, for the sake of his own Convenience and Ease, and to save me farther Trouble, will consider what is not essential to either his Comfort or Happiness, further than mere Opinion makes it so; on the other Hand, allow me to recommend a Gentleness, even to Forbearance, with Persons so intirely in our Power. We know not what the Chance of War may be; but, let it be what it will, the Duties of Humanity and Kindness will demand from us such a Treatment, as we should expect from others, the Case being reversed. I am, etc.

## **To THE MASSACHUSETTS LEGISLATURE**

Cambridge, September 28, 1775.

Gentn: The Indian who accompanies Mr. Kirkland<sup>73</sup> is an Oneida Chief, of considerable Rank in his own Country; He has come on a Visit to the Camp, principally to satisfy his Curiosity; But as his Tribe has been very friendly to the United Colonies and his Report to his Nation, at his Return, have important Consequences to the public Interest, I have Studiously endeavour'd to make his Visit agreeable.

Having express'd an Inclination to pay his Respects to the General Court, I thought it proper to let them know who he was and upon what Errand he came; Not doubting, but your Honorable Board will join with me in shewing him all proper Civilities. I have directed a present to be prepared for him at his Return. I am Gentn., etc.

73. Rev. Samuel Kirkland, missionary to the Oneida Indians.

**To THE COMMITTEE OF PORTSMOUTH, NEW HAMPSHIRE**

October 5, 1775.

Gentn: I am to acknowledge the Receipt of your favor of the 2d Inst.; informing me that the Ship Prince George Capt. Emms, from Bristol to Boston, with Flour for the Enemy, by a mistake of her Captain and the Spirited Conduct of some of the Inhabitants was now in your Possession.

I cannot but consider this as a most Providential Event, the State of this Army being alone defective in that Article, it would therefore highly Conduce to the Public Interest and to our relief, to forward it hither as soon as possible, which I apprehend may be done with Safety and ease by Water as far as Salem or Marblehead; in the mean time I will communicate the Matter to the Continental Congress for their Direction: as to the Compensation to be made the Captors and the determination of what Property

arises by the Capture, and in whom Vested.

What ever Expenses may accrue in Complying with the above Request and whatever risque may be run by the Carriage by Water I will engage; but as I do not learn there are any of the Enemy's Ships on the Coast, I hope the Risque is very small. I am &c.

## **To THE COMMITTEE OF THE CITY OF NEW YORK**

Camp at Cambridge, October 5, 1775.

Gentn: By an Intelligent Person from Boston the 3d Inst. I am informed that a Fleet consisting of one 64, one 20 Gun Ship, 2 Sloops of 18 Guns, two Transports with 600 Men, were to sail from Boston as Yesterday, their Destination a profound secret; that they took on board 2 Mortars and 4 Howitzers with other Artillery, calculated for the Bombardment of a Town. I have thought proper to apprise every Considerable Town on the Coast of this Armament that they may be upon their guard.

Should I receive any further Account of their Destination,

it shall be forwarded.<sup>26</sup>

The same Person also informs that an Express Sloop arrived 4 Days before from England at Boston, which she left the 8th of August. Genl. Gage and most of the officers who were at Lexington, are recalled and Sail this day, General Howe succeeds to the Command, 6 Ships of the Line and 2 Cutters under Sir Peter Dennis are coming out, Five Regiments and 1000 Marines may be expected at Boston in 3 or 4 Weeks; No prospect of Accommodation, but on the other Hand every appearance of the War being pushed with the utmost Vigour. I am Gentn. etc.

## **To THE MASSACHUSETTS LEGISLATURE**

Head Quarters, October 6, 1775.

Gentn: On the 29th August I did myself the Honor of addressing you on the Complaint of the Quarter Master respecting Wood for the Army. The Recess of the House of Representatives

prevented any Steps being taken upon it. I must now beg leave to recall your Attention to my Letter of that Date, as the Evil is increasing, and more alarming as the Winter approaches. Little or no Wood is brought in, and it is apprehended the Owners keep it back to impose an unreasonable Price.

26. This news, in practically these same words, was sent to most of the seacoast towns.

The Communication at Winnisimet Ferry, which was opened for the Relief of the unhappy Sufferers at Boston, is now turned into a Convenience for the Enemy; a whole week has some times elapsed, without a Boat being permitted to come out, and there have been many Irregularities there, which the Distance of my other Engagements, have prevented my attending to; before I gave any order upon the Subject, I thought proper to Communicate my Intentions to you, that if there were any Special Reasons against the proposed Alteration, you may have an opportunity of making me acquainted with them.

By an Estimate laid before me by the Quarter Master General, I find it will be impracticable, to provide sufficient Barracks for the Troops before the Season is too far advanced, without appropriating many of the Houses in and about Cambridge to this use; Many of the Inhabitants who had deserted them, are now returning under the protection of the Army. I feel a great Repugnance to exclude them from what is their own, but Necessity in this case I fear will supercede all other Considerations. I must beg the Genl. Court to Act upon it. I am etc.

**To GOVERNOR JONATHAN TRUMBULL**

Camp at Cambridge, October 13, 1775.

Sir: Your favor of the 9th. Instant has been duly received; The Fleet mentioned in mine of the 6th Inst., has been standing N, N, E., so that we presume it is destined against some Town of this Province, or New Hampshire, or possibly gone to Quebec.

Our last Advices, were very favorable, from Colo. Arnold; by the 20th Inst. we expect he will be at Quebec, A Gentleman of Character from Canada assures me, he will meet with no opposition there.

I am sorry other Avocations will deprive me of the pleasure of seeing you in Camp at the proposed Conference, I hope upon some other occasion you will do us the favor of a Visit, I shall be happy in every opportunity to manifest my Respect and Regard for the Government of Connecticut.

No Occurrence of any Consequence in either Camp since my last.

In my last Letter from the Congress, it is mentioned, that the Armed Vessels of Connecticut will be sent on a Special Service with which you are acquainted; In your next you will Please to inform me, whether they may be expected to proceed in that Enterprize. Two will proceed from hence with all Expedition. Govr. Cooke informs me he can give us no Assistance in it. I am etc.

**To GOVERNOR NICHOLAS COOKE**

[Cambridge, October 13, 1775.]

Sir: I am favor'd with yours of the 10th and am sorry it so happened, that the proposed Scheme of Intercepting the Enemy's Ordnance Stores cannot have your Assistance.

The Experience your Officers and Men have had, by an earlier attention to Sea Service, would have made them very acceptable on the proposed Enterprise.

The Fleet which Sailed out of Boston a few Days ago and of which I apprized you the 6th Instant, has been seen standing N, N, E. From which we suppose they are destined against some Town of this Province, or New Hampshire, or possibly to Quebec.

We have no Occurrence of any Consequence in the Camp since I had the Pleasure of Writing you last.

I find the Delegates did not expect to leave Philadelphia till the 6th. Instant, so that their Arrival here will be later than at first proposed. I expect the pleasure of seeing you shortly, and am etc.

**To THE COMMITTEE OF SAFETY OF NEW HAMPSHIRE**

Camp at Cambridge, October 15, 1775.

Gentn: I was yesterday favored with yours of the 11th Inst., wherein the Necessities of the Town of Portsmouth and the Garrison there, for some Part of the late Capture of Flour are represented; Had I known their Situation I should have made the Application unnecessary, by directing Mr. Moylan on the Subject, They have my Chearful Consent, to take what is necessary, but perhaps somewhat less than 600 Barrels may Answer the present Exigence; As our mutual Wants are now known to each other, I shall leave it to you to reserve what Quantity, you think indispensably Necessary.

I do not see any Impropriety in paying the Seamen their Wages, out of the Sales of some part of the Cargo and make no doubt it will be approved in the Settlement of this Affair.

With respect to the Transportation of it to Marblehead or Salem by Water, I apprehend it must depend upon Circumstances such as the Enemy being upon

the Coast &c., of all which Mr Moylan was directed to inform himself and then Act as should be best, The Expence of Land Carriage would be very Considerable and I wish to use all possible Oeconomy so as to be consistent with our Safety. You will Please to favor Mr Moylan with your Opinion on the Subject, to which he will pay a Suitable Regard. I am etc.

## **To THE NEW YORK LEGISLATURE**

Camp at Cambridge, October 24, 1775.

Sir: Your Favor of the 12 Inst. I duly received and thank you for inclosing Captn. Thompson<sup>48</sup> Information; the Contents of the Deposition, now transmitted to you are of such a Nature, that I thought no Time should be lost, in giving you the earliest Notice of them. I am etc.

48. Captain Thompson, a sea captain of a ship from London, was subjected to an examination before the New York Congress. No copy of his information has been found in the *Washington Papers*.



## **To THE COMMITTEE OF FALMOUTH**

Camp at Cambridge October 24, 1775.

Gentn: The Desolation and Misery, which Ministerial Vengeance had Planned, in Contempt of every Principle of

Humanity, has been solately brought on the Town of Falmouth, I know not how Sufficiently to detest. Nor can my compassion for the General Suffering, be conceived beyond the true Measure of my Feelings. But my Readiness to relieve you, by complying with your Request, signified in your favor of the 21st Inst., is Circumscribed by my Inability; The immediate Necessities of the Army under my Command, require all the Powder and Ball that can be Collected with the utmost Industry and Trouble.<sup>50</sup> The Authority of my Station does not extend so far, as to impower me, to send a Detachment of Men down to your Assistance. Thus Circumstanced, I can only add my Wishes and Exhortations, that you may repel every future Attempt, to perpetrate the like Savage Cruelties.

I have given Liberty to several Officers, in Col. Phinney's Regiment, to Visit their Connections, which may now Stand in need of their presence and Assistance, by reason of this new exertion of Despotic Barbarity. I am, Gentn, etc.

50. On October 24 Washington entered into an agreement with John Fisk for a supply of powder, to be furnished on or before Apr. 1, 1776, at the rate of 4 shillings a pound for any quantity up to 20 tons.

## **To GOVERNOR JONATHAN TRUMBULL**

Camp at Cambridge, October 29, 1775.

Sir: Since I had the Pleasure of Addressing you last, no material Occurrence has happened in our Camp.

Dy Governor Griswold was desirous of taking the

Minutes of the Conference with the Delegates of the Continental Congress with him; but they were so lengthy the Time did not admit of it. As soon as they can be copied fair they shall be transmitted.

I was somewhat Surprized to find that in one of the Regiments lately from Connecticut, a Doctor Chiney<sup>56</sup> had been Commissioned as a Surgeon. As I am persuaded he must have obtained this Appointment by some Misrepresentation, I think it proper to apprize you of his Conduct and Behaviour last Summer being suspected of fraudulent Draughts upon the Commissary Store and other Malpractices, it was proposed to bring him to a Trial, which he evaded by requesting a Dismission which was granted him. After which I am very Credibly informed he returned to his Colony, where he has propogated the most infamous Reports of some of the General Officers. Reports tending to impress the Minds of the Soldiery and Country with prejudices, which would dissolve that Confidence which ought to subsist between Troops and their Officers. Since he has returned to Camp, he has renewed his Draughts upon the Stores, but being immediately detected, I have ordered him under Arrest, and hope Sufficient Evidence may be had to convict him, so as to rid the Army of him intirely.—But I beg leave to intimate to you, the Propriety of Observing some Caution in giving Commissions to Persons who have been discharged, before you are apprized of the Reasons of their leaving the Army.

56. Dr. Penuel Cheeney, surgeon's mate, of the Third Connecticut Regiment.

I am glad to hear the Commissary General<sup>57</sup> is in a fair way of Recovery; I hope it will not be long before we have the Pleasure of seeing him in the Camp. I am Sir etc.

P.S. have you heard anything of the Lead proposed to be sent from Albany in August, allow me to call your attention to this important article.

**To GOVERNOR NICHOLAS COOKE**

Camp at Cambridge, October 29, 1775.

Sir: Your Favor of the 25th Instant came safely to hand. Capt. Whipple's Voyage has been unfortunate, but it is not in our Power to Command Success, tho' it is always our duty to deserve it; I hope he will be more Successful in his intended Voyage, if it is proposed in consequence of the Direction of the Congress, I think it Proper you should apprize him, that two Schooners have Sail'd from hence to the Mouth of St. Lawrence River, upon the same Service Commanded by Capt. Broughton and Captain Sellman; The Signal which they have agreed on to distinguish each other and to be known to their Friends, is the Ensign up to the Main Topping Lift. I agree with you that the Attachment of our Bermudian Bretheren ought to recommend them to the favorable Regard of their Friends of America, and I doubt not it will, I shall certainly take a proper opp'y

57. Col. Joseph Trumbull.

to make their Case known to the Honble. Continental Congress.

I shall be happy in every opportunity to shew the Esteem and Regard with which I am etc.

#### **To THE MASSACHUSETTS LEGISLATURE**

Camp at Cambridge, October 30, 1775.

Sir: At the Instance and request of the Committee of Cape Ann, I dispatch'd Major Mason to Survey and make a Report of such Works of Defence as were already constructed there and how far any New one might be Necessary. From his Observations and Account, I find that a Battery may be erected there to the great advantage, and Security of the Place; But the small Stock of Artillery, belonging to the Army prevents me from Supplying the Materials for this Purpose. I have therefore thought proper to acquaint you, with the Circumstances of the Case, that you may make the best Provision for this Necessity, and have also sent Major Mason<sup>60</sup> down to you, that particular

Enquiry, if desired may be made; Be pleased to communicate this Information to your Honorable House. I am Sir, etc.

60. Maj. David Mason of Gridley's artillery.

**To GOVERNOR JONATHAN TRUMBULL**

Camp at Cambridge, November 2, 1775.

Sir: I have been honored with your favor of the 30th Ult. by Mr. Trumbull<sup>72</sup> I sincerely wish this Camp could furnish a good Engineer. The Commissary General<sup>73</sup> can inform you, how exceedingly Deficient the Army is of Gentlemen skill'd in that branch of Business, and that most of the Works which have been thrown up for the Defence of our Several Incampments, have been planned by a few of the Principal officers of this Army, assisted by Mr. Knox<sup>74</sup> a Gentleman of Worcester. could I afford you the desired Assistance, in this way, I should do it with Pleasure.

Herewith you will receive a Copy of the proceedings held with the Committee of Congress from Philadelphia, it

72. Probably Jonathan Trumbull, jr.

73. Col. Joseph Trumbull.

74. Brig. Gen. Henry Knox.

ought to have been sent sooner; but I am at present without a Secretary. Colo Reed having a call at home, left this on Sunday last. I heartily Congratulate you on the recovery of the Commissary General, whose Return so soon as he can travel with Safety, is much wished for. I am etc.

**To GOVERNOR NICHOLAS COOKE**

Camp at Cambridge, November 2, 1775.

Sir: I have your favor of the 20th Ulto. before me. Immediately upon receipt of it, I communicated the contents to the Dy Commissary (Mr Trumbull being Sick in Connecticut) as a business appertaining to his Department; but as Dep'y he wishes for the Direction of his Principal, to whom I could wish you to write, as he is at Lebanon and not expected back under three weeks.—his intention I know, was to make both Beef and Pork bring itself to this Place; but as that cannot be in the case you mention, there is no doubt of his readiness to take the Beef, if delivered here in Barrels at the Price other Beef in Barrels stand him in here.—perhaps (for an Encouragement) more, to get it out of the reach of the Enemy.

I thank you for your order in favor of Mr. Bowen,<sup>75</sup> who I am informed after some trouble, got the Cannon wanted,

75. Ephraim Bowen, captain and agent for fitting out armed vessels at Plymouth, Mass. He was, later, a deputy quartermaster general.

somewhat more convenient. Herewith you will receive a Copy of the Proceedings of the Conference held at this Place with the Committee of Congress. Nothing new since my last. With much esteem etc.

## **To THE MASSACHUSETTS LEGISLATURE**

Cambridge, November 2, 1775.

Sir: I Promised the Gentlemen who did me the Honor to call upon me yesterday, by order of your House, that I would enquire of the Quarter Master General and let them know to day, what Quantity of Wood and Hay would be necessary to supply the Army thro' the Winter, I accordingly did so and desired Genl. Gates this morning to inform you, that it was his (the Quarter Master's) Opinion it would require ten thousand Cords of the first and two hundred Tons of the Latter to answer our demands; but the hurry in which we have been all day engaged, caused him to forget it, till a fresh

Complaint brought it again to remembrance. When the Committee were here yesterday, I told them I did not believe that we had then more than four Days Stock of Wood before hand. I little thought that we had scarce four hours, and that different Regiments were upon the Point of cutting each others throats for a few Standing Locusts near their Encampments, to dress their victuals with. This however is the fact, and unless

some expedient is adopted by your honorable Body to draw more Teams into the Service or the Qur M. Genl. impower'd to impress them, this Army, if their comes a Spell of Rainy or Cold weather, must inevitably disperse, the Consequence of which need no animadversion of Mine.

It has been matter of great grief to me to see so many Valuable able Plantations of Trees destroyed. —I endeavoured (whilst there appeared a Possibility of restraining it) to prevent the practice, but it is out of my power to do it, from Fences to Forrest Trees, and from Forrest Trees to fruit Trees, is a Natural advance to houses, which must next follow; this is not all, the distress of the Soldiers in the Article of Wood will I fear have an unhappy influence upon their enlisting again.

In short Sir, if I did not apprehend every evil that can result from the want of these two Capital Articles, wood especially I should not be so importunate. my anxiety on this head must plead my excuse; at the same time I assure you that with great respect and esteem, etc.

## **To THE COMMITTEE OF FALMOUTH**

Cambridge, November 6, 1775.

Sir: I received your favor of the 2d Inst., and am very sorry it is not in my power to Supply the necessities of the

Town of Falmouth; I have referr'd the Gentleman who brought me your Letter, to the General Court of this Province, who I hope will fall upon some method for your Assistance, the arrival of the Cerberus Man of War is very alarming; I do not apprehend they will attempt to penetrate into the Country, as you seem to be afraid of; if they should Attempt to Land any of their Men, I would have

the good People of the Country, by all means to make every possible opposition in their Power, for it will be much easier to prevent their making a Lodgment, than to force them from it, when they have got Possession.

I write by this Conveyance to Col. Phinney, who will give you every advice and Assistance in his Power. I Sincerely sympathize with the People in the distress they are drove to, but it is in such times, that they should exert themselves in the Noble Cause of Liberty and their Country. I am, Sir, &c.

### **To THE MASSACHUSETTS LEGISLATURE**

Cambridge, November 9, 1775.

Sir: A Mr. Lewis, who left Boston yesterday afternoon, Informs me, that on Account of the Scarcity of Wood and Provisions in that Place, General Howe has Issued a Proclamation, desiring such of the Inhabitants as are Inclined to leave the Town to give in their Names and a list of their effects before 12 OClock this day.

As the Caution necessary to be used with these People, to prevent a Communication of the Small Pox and the proper care of them when out, are objects of exceeding great importance; I submit them to the consideration of your honble. Body, before it's recess, and if the Honble. Council should likewise adjourn, I must also recommend to your Attention the Necessity there is of constituting some Court, before whom all Persons inimical or Suspected to be Inimical to America, should be brought for

examination. my time is so much taken up with Military affairs that it is impossible for me to pay a proper attention to these matters.—There will be sent to you amongst others a James Smithwicke, who from an intercepted Letter, appears to have resolved to get into Boston, there is a small Trunk belonging to him, now in my possession, which Contains in Gold and Silver about 500£ Lawful Money, which it is probable he intended to carry in with him. The owner and Capt. of a Small Coaster put into Beverly in distress, bound from Boston to Nova Scotia will appear before you; they

have carried on a Trade of supplying Boston with Provisions &c for some time. I beg leave to refer them to your examination, and have the Honor to be Sir, etc.

P.S. Smithwicke's Trunk will be sent to you with him.

**To GOVERNOR JONATHAN TRUMBULL**

Cambridge, November 15, 1775.

Sir: I received your favor of the 6th Inst., in which you give a detail of Doctr. Chineys case, as it appeared before you and Council, in which nothing but the fair side of his Character appears, You may be assured Sir, that his Trial will be impartial, that no insidious designs of his enemies will have weight, and that it will give me much pleasure to find he can acquit himself of the Crimes he is charged with: the evidences are hourly expected, on their Arrival the Trial will be no

longer delayed. General Sullivan set out the 12th Inst. for Portsmouth New Hampshire. I enclose you a Copy of instructions given unto him.

As it is now very apparent that we have nothing to depend on in the present Contest, but our own Strength, Care firmness and union; should not the same measures be adopted in yours and every other Government on the Continent? would it not be prudence to Seize on those Tories, who have been, are and that we know, will be active against us; why should persons who are preying upon the Vitals of their Country be suffered to stalk at large, whilst we know they will do us every mischief in their Power. these Sir, are points I beg to submit to your serious Consideration.

I congratulate you on the Success of our Arms, by the surrender of St. Johns, which hope will be soon followed by the Reduction of Canada. I have the honor etc.<sup>3</sup>

P. S by an express arrived from Philadelphia I received the following resolve of the Continental Congress.



Resolved, that Doctor Church be close confined in some secure Goal in the Colony of Connecticut without the use of Pen Ink and Paper, and that no person be allowed to converse with him, except in the presence of a Magistrate or the Sherriff of the County, where he shall be confined, and in the English

3. The last two paragraphs of this letter were also sent, this date, to Governor Cooke, of Rhode Island.

Language until further orders from this or a future Congress.

Attest Charles Thomson Secy.

By order of the Congress John Hancock President.<sup>4</sup>

Sir in consequence of the above resolve I now transmit to your care Doctor Church under the Guard of Captain Israel Putnam a Sergeant and seven Men. You will please to comply in every particular with the above Resolution of Congress.

4. This resolve was adopted on November 7.

## **To THE NEW YORK LEGISLATURE**

Cambridge, November 16, 1775.

Sir: It was determined at a Conference held here in the last Month, that such Military Stores as could be spared from New York, Crown Point, Ticonderoga &c., should be sent here for the use of the Continental Army. As it was not clear to me, whether I was to send for or that they were to be sent to me, I desired Mr. Reed on his way to Philadelphia, to enquire into this matter; as I have not heard from him on the subject, and the Season advancing fast, I have thought it necessary to send Hen: Knox Esqr who will deliver you this. After he forwards what he can get at your Place, he will proceed to Genl Schuyler, on this very important business.

I request the favor of you Sir, and the Gentlemen of your Congress, to give Mr. Knox all the assistance in your power, by so doing you will render infinite service to your Country and vastly oblige Sir, etc.

**To GOVERNOR NICHOLAS COOKE**

Cambridge, November 18, 1775.

Sir: Your favor of the 13th Inst. by Mr. Philips I received, in answer thereto you will be pleased to order the Officers and Men that have been Stationed at Block Island, to March to this Camp. Reinforcements are Wanting, and probably will be; when they are here, they will be incorporated into the Continental Army, if they choose it, the many Circumstances attending the new arrangement of which had in some measure occasioned me to forget these Men before. When an Account of the

Wages and Subsistence due to them is transmitted. I shall give necessary orders for their payment. I congratulate you upon your appointment to the Government of the Colony and am much obliged by the assurances you give me of such assistance as may be in your power. I am, etc.

**To THE COMMITTEE OF THE COUNCIL OF MASSACHUSETTS**

Cambridge, November 24, 1775.

Gentn: Capt. Aaron Willard recommends Ms. Moses Child to be his Colleague in the Journey to Nova Scotia; as I know nothing of this Gentleman, I cannot approve or disapprove of him. Mr. Willard informs me he is well known unto Doctr. Taylor, if you think him capable and trustworthy, you will please to fill up the Instructions with his Name, which Capt. Willard will give unto you. you will please to furnish Capt. Willard with Letters to Capt. Obryan and to Col Cargill to give every assistance to him and his Companion on their tour. I am with great respect Yours &c.

**To THE MASSACHUSETTS LEGISLATURE**

Cambridge, November 29, 1775.

Gentn: The Necessity of giving furloughs to the Soldiers of the present, who Inlists into the new Army (by way of encouragement and to afford opportunity of providing necessaries for themselves and Families) was so strongly impress'd upon me, that I have consented to fifty of a Regiment being absent at a time: this will be a reduction of at least 1500 Men from the Strength of our Lines: to this I am to add, that contrary to my expectations and assurances given, I now find that the Connecticut Regiments cannot be induced to stay beyond their Limited term. Such a Considerable diminution of our force, at

a time when so capitol a change is taking Place in the face of an Enemy, Increasing in Strength, cannot but be attended with extreme hazard, if some expedient is not fallen upon to supply the Deficiency.

I have summoned the General Officers, to meet at Head Quarters at eleven OClock to morrow, to advise what is to be done in this emergency, and should be glad to be aided by a Member or two of your Court, at the Consultation; as I think our Situation Critical and delays dangerous.

In perusing a Resolve of your Honble. body, I perceive it to be determined, that your Troops are to be paid by the Lunar (or 28 Days to the Month) from the time of their enlisting to the first of August.—upon which I cannot help observing as my opinion, that it will throw the rest of this Army into disorder and that as the Continental Congress have in explicit terms resolved, that it is the Kalender Month they mean to pay by; that the difference between the two must be considered as a Colonial not a Continental Charge.

**To GOVERNOR JONATHAN TRUMBULL**

Cambridge, December 2, 1775.

Sir: The reason of my giving you the trouble of this, is the late extraordinary and reprehensible conduct of some of the Connecticut

Troops. Sometime ago, apprehending that some of them might incline to go home when their time of enlistment should be up, I applied to the Officers of the several Regiments, to know whether it would be agreeable to the men, to continue till the 1st. of January, or until a sufficient number of other forces could be raised to supply their Place; who Informed me that they believed the whole of them would readily stay, till that could be effected. Having discovered last week, that they were very uneasy to leave the Service, and determined upon it; I thought it expedient, to summon the General Officers at Head Quarters, and Invited a Delegation of the General Court, to be present, that Suitable measures might be adopted for the defence and Support of our lines; the result was, that three thousand of the Minute Men and Militia of this Province, and two thousand men from New Hampshire, should be called in by the 10th. Instant for that purpose. With this determination the Connecticut Troops were made acquainted, and requested and ordered to remain here, as the time of most of them would not be out before the 10th., when they would be relieved. Notwithstanding this, yesterday morning, most of them resolved to leave the Camp; many went off, and the utmost Vigilance and Industry were used to apprehend them; several got away with their Arms and Amunition. I have inclosed you a list of the names of some of them in Genl. Putnam's Regiment only who escaped; and submit to your judgment, whether some example should not be made of these men, who have

basely deserted the Cause of their Country at this critical Juncture, when the Enemy are receiving Reinforcement.<sup>35</sup>

## **To GOVERNOR NICHOLAS COOKE**

Cambridge, December 5, 1775.

Sir: I have of late met with abundant reason, to be convinced of the impracticability of Recruiting this Army to the New establishment, in any reasonable time by voluntary Inlistments. The causes of such exceeding great lukewarmness, I shall not undertake to point out; sufficient it is to know, that the fact is so. Many reasons are Assigned; one only I shall mention, and that is, that the present Soldiery are in expectation of drawing from the landed Interest and Farmers, a bounty equal to the

Commencement of this Army, and that therefore they play off. Be this as it may, I am satisfied that this is not a time for trifling and that the Exigency of our affairs calls aloud for vigorous exertions.

By sad experience it is found, that the Connecticut Regiments have deserted and are about to desert the noble cause we are engaged in. Nor have I any reason to believe, that the Forces of New Hampshire, this Government or Rhode Island,

35. Ford quotes from the letter of Silas Deane to his wife (December 15): “The behavior of our soldiers has made me sick; but little better could be expected from men trained up with notions of their right of saying how, and when, and under whom, they will serve; and who have, for certain dirty political purposes been tampered with by their officers, among whom no less than a *general* has been busy.”

Gen. Charles Lee stated in a letter to Benjamin Rush that the Connecticut men “marched off bag and baggage, but in passing through the lines of other regiments they were so horribly hissed, groaned at and pelted, that I believed they wished their aunts, grandmothers and even sweethearts, to whom the day before they were so much attached, at the Devil's own palace.”

This is a very different picture from that in Washington's letter to Trumbull. The latter, in his reply, expressed grief, surprise, and indignation, promised to furnish Connecticut's quota of men, and begged Washington not to judge of the temper and spirit of the colony by the conduct of these troops.

will give stronger proofs of their Attachment to it, when the period arrives, when they may Claim their dismissal. For after every stimulus in my power to throw in their way, and near a month's close endeavour, we have Inlisted men, 1500 of which are to be absent at a time on Furlough, until all have gone home in order to Visit and provide for their Families.

Five thousand Militia from this Government and the Colony of New Hampshire, are ordered to be at this Place by the 10th Instant, to relieve the Connecticut Regiments and Supply the deficiency which will be occasioned by their departure and of those on furlough. These men, I am told by

officers who have been Eye witnesses to their behaviour are not to be depended upon for more than a few days; as they soon get tired, grow impatient, ungovernable and of course leave the Service. what will be the consequences then, If the greatest part of the Army is to be composed of such Men? Upon the new Establishment 26 Regiments were ordered to be raised, besides those of the Artillery and Riflemen.—of these, New Hampshire has 3, Massachusetts 16, Rhode Island 2, and Connecticut 5. A mode of appointing the Officers was also recommended, and as strictly adhered to as circumstances would admit of. These officers are now recruiting, with the success I have mentioned.

Thus Sir, have I given you a true and impartial State of our Situation, and Submit it to the Wisdom of your and the other three New England Colonies, whether some

vigorous measures, If the powers of Government are adequate ought not to be adopted, to facilitate the Completion of this army without offering a bounty from the public, which Congress have declared against, thinking the terms exclusive thereof, greater than ever Soldiers had. I have by this conveyance, laid the Matter before Congress, but the critical Situation of our affairs will not Await their deliberation and Recommendation. Something must be done without further delay. I am Sir, &c.<sup>43</sup>

43. The same letter was sent to Governor Trumbull and the Legislatures of Massachusetts and New Hampshire.

## **To THE MASSACHUSETTS LEGISLATURE**

Cambridge, December 6, 1775.

Sir' Copies of the inclosed Letters I have already written to the Governors of Rhode Island and Connecticut and shall do the same to the president of the Congress in New Hampshire; as I conceive our affairs are in a very Critical situation. It was mentioned to me yesterday in conversation, that the Militia of this Government, who were ordered in to supply the places of the Connecticut troops, are allowed in to Month of 28 days. The first I highly approved of, because I

was unwilling to see any invidious distinction in pay, the never failing consequence of which is, jealousy and discord. But Sir, if the Genl. Court of this Colony have resolved on the latter, you must give me leave to add, that it aims the most fatal stab to the peace of this Army, that ever was given; and that Lord North himself could not have devised a more effectual blow to the recruiting Service. Excuse me Sir, for the Strength of these expressions. If my information is wrong, (I had it from Genl Heath, who says he had it from a Member of your Court) they are altogether Improper, and I crave your Pardon for them: if right, my zeal in the American Cause must plead

my Excuse. I am, etc.

**To GOVERNOR NICHOLAS COOKE**

Cambridge, December 6, 1775.

Sir: Your favors of the 25th and 30th Ultio. I received, and am to inform you, that from the good Character you gave of Mr. Aborn, I ordered the Agent in whose care his Vessel was, to deliver her up to him. There were other Circumstances too, that were favorable to Mr. Aborn and induced a belief that he was not inimical to our Cause. I am much obliged, by your kind attention to my two Letters of the 15th and 18th of Novr., and for your promise to lay the matters mention'd in the first before the General Committee and ordering the Troops, which were on Block Island, to this Camp. I am &c.

**\*To GOVERNOR NICHOLAS COOKE**

Cambridge, December 7, 1775.

Sir: Your favour of the 4th Instant, I this moment Received, advising of the taking of a Captain and Midshipman of one of the King's Armed Schooners. You will be pleased to take their Parole, not to leave Northampton until they are properly discharged, they will be sent there where there are several other Officers prisoners. I am Sir &c.

As soon as the deficiency can be ascertained I will inform you; at present, I refer you to the other Letters, which will be handed you by favor of Col. Babcock.

**To THE COMMITTEE OF SAFETY AT PORTSMOUTH, NEW HAMPSHIRE**

Cambridge, December 7, 1775.

Gentn.: Richard Emms a prisoner at Portsmouth, having expressed a strong desire to go to his family and friends in the West Indies, in a Schooner which is about to go there; you will be pleased to grant him a permit for that purpose, unless there be objections against it, which I am not apprized of.—I am &c.

**To THE MASSACHUSETTS LEGISLATURE**

Cambridge, December 10, 1775.

Sirs: I this moment received from Mr. Thomas Crafts the Letter you have inclosed, from which it will appear, that some of the People who came out of Boston, are infected with the Small Pox. as this disorder should it spread may prove very disastrous and fatal to our Army and the Country around it, I should hope that you will have such necessary Steps taken, as will prevent the infection's being farther communicated. I am Sir, etc.

**To THE COMMITTEE OF SIMSBURY, CONNECTICUT**

Cambridge, December 11, 1775.

Gentn.: The Prisoners which will be delivered you with this, having been tried by a Court Martial, and deem'd to be such flagrant and atrocious villains, that they cannot by any means be set at large or confined in any Place near this Camp, were sentenced to be sent to Symsbury in Connecticut; you will therefore be pleased, to have them secured in your Jail, or in such other Manner as to



you shall seem Necessary, so that they Cannot possibly make their escape. the charges of their imprisonment will be at the Continental expence. I am &c.

**To GOVERNOR NICHOLAS COOKE**

Cambridge, December 14, 1775.

Sir: Your favor of the 11th. Inst. was handed me by the two french Gentlemen, Monsieurs Penet and De pleurne,<sup>50</sup> for which I am exceedingly obliged to you. I have heard their proposals and plan, for supplying the Continent with Arms and Amunition, which appear plausible and to promise Success; But not thinking

50. Pierre Penet and Emanuel de Pliarne, merchants from Nantes, France. They arrived in Rhode Island from Cape François. This seems to have been the first outside assistance received by the Colonies, but this venture does not appear to have been connected in any way with Beaumarchais or the French Government. The precise quantity of supplies furnished by Penet and Pliarne is not easily discovered. Penet has the unique distinction of having been made a brevet aide-de-camp to Washington before his return to France. Pliarne remained in America and was accidentally drowned while crossing the Potomac at Georgetown (now a part of Washington, D. C.).

myself Authorised to Enter into any contract respecting the same and being not fully acquainted with the Measures Congress have adopted for procuring these Articles; I have prevailed upon them to go to Philadelphia and Recommended them and the Consideration of their plan to that Body, where the Matter will be finally agreed upon or rejected.

I must request the favor of you, to furnish every Necessary for accomodating them and Carriages with all expedition, for Carrying them as far as Governor Trumbull's. They are to travel at the Continental Expence, and whatever charge you may be at on their Account, you will be pleased to transmit to me, and it shall be immediately Reimbursed.<sup>51</sup> Yours &c.

51. Practically this same letter was written this same day to Governor Trumbull.

**To GOVERNOR JONATHAN TRUMBULL**

Cambridge, December 15, 1775.

Sir: Your favors of the 7th and 9th Inst. I received and was much pleased to hear of the Zeal of the people of Connecticut and the readiness of the Inhabitants of the several Towns, to march to this Camp upon their being acquainted with the behaviour and desertion of their Troops. I have nothing to suggest for the consideration of your Assembly; I am confident they will not be wanting in their exertions, for supporting the just and constitutional rights of the Colonies.

Inclosed I send you a list of the Officers and Companies under the New establishment, with the number of the Men Inlisted; the Return only came in to day, or I would have transmitted it before.

Having heard that It's doubtful, whether the Reverend

Mr. Leonard<sup>58</sup> from your Colony, will have it in his power to Continue here as a Chaplain, I cannot but express some Concern, as I think his departure will be a loss. His General Conduct has been exemplary and praiseworthy: In discharging the duties of his Office, active and industrious; he has discovered himself warm and steady friend to his Country, and taken great pains to animate the Soldiery and Impress them with a knowledge of the important rights we are contending for. Upon the late desertion of the Troops, he gave a Sensible and judicious discourse, holding forth the Necessity of courage and bravery and at the same time of Obedience and Subordination to those in Command.

In justice to the merits of this Gentleman, I thought it only right to give you this Testimonial of my Opinion of him and to mention him to you, as a person worthy of your esteem and that of the Public. I am Sir, &c.

58. Abiel Leonard, chaplain of the Third Connecticut Regiment; chaplain of Knox's Continental artillery through the year 1776. He became insane in 1777 and died in 1778.

## **To THE MASSACHUSETTS LEGISLATURE**

Cambridge, December 16,<sup>64</sup> 1775.

Gentn.: Among many Resolves of Congress which were forwarded to me the other day, are the inclosed.

Not being able to discover from the Resolves themselves, or the Letter which accompanied them, whether a Copy had been transmitted to you by the president, or to be handed in by me, I thought it best to err on the safe side; especially as the Qr M Genl. has just informed me, that he is exceeding scarce of Hay and can get none under Six Pounds lawful a Ton; and that he is fearful, if he should even consent to offer this, (enormous as it is), the price will be further advanced upon him, as heretofore and in the Article of Wood. I am &c.

64. On this day Washington wrote a short note to Congress informing that body of the sailing of 10 vessels from Boston, with one regiment of foot and three of light horse, said to be bound for Halifax. He also wrote practically the same note to the New Hampshire Legislature.

## **To GOVERNOR NICHOLAS COOKE**

Cambridge, December 17, 1775.

Sir: By Sundry persons and Accounts just from Boston, I am informed, that the Minesterial Army is in very great distress for want of fresh Provisions and having received intelligence that there are 200 fat Cattle on Block Island and some Transport Vessels cruizing that way, in quest of Necessaries for the Army, I must request you to have the Cattle &c. removed from thence immediately, and from every other place where their Ships can come and take them of; It is a matter of the utmost importance, to prevent their getting a Supply; If they can be hindered now, the

advanced Season of the year and the Inclement Weather, which we may expect ere long, will put it out of their power.

I yesterday received the inclosed information from several persons who lately came out from Boston, which I thought my duty to transmit to you. It is more than probable, that the destination of the Troops may be very

different from what they have given out; they may have made use of that to deceive in another Quarter?<sup>65</sup> I am &c.

65. The information in the last paragraph was also sent to Governor Trumbull, this date, with an additional sentence: "Brig. Genl Prescott as it is said, having treated Col. Allen with Severity, I beg your particular attention, least he should escape." Brig. Gen. Richard Prescott had surrendered at Montreal. This was the same officer captured two years later by the daring of Col. William Barton, of the Rhode Island Militia.

## **To GOVERNOR NICHOLAS COOKE**

Cambridge, December 20, 1775.

Sir: The Letter accompanying this was wrote before your favor of the 19th. pr. Express came to hand. Under my present Instructions, and more especially in my present situation, I could not justify the Sending a Regiment from these lines to you; unless there was an apparent design of Landing a body of Ministerial Troops on Rhode Island; at present I do not think this is to be apprehended, as a deserter out of Boston since my last, is particular in declaring that only four Companies, amounting to little more than 100 Men, Embarked as was said for Halifax; agreeing with others that Invalids and the Officers of the 18th and 59th Regts. who are going home to recruit, had sailed for England.

The intention of my last, containing the Information as it was received, was only designed to put you upon your guard, not that I expected a Visit was intended you. If any small body of Troops move from hence, Southerly, I have no expectation of their Stopping short of Virginia; unless it

should be on a Pillaging party. To conclude Sir, when I inform you, that I have been obliged to call in 5000 Militia, to supply the deficiency of the Connecticut Regiments and those absent upon Furlough, you will do me the justice to believe, that not a want of inclination but of ability, prevents me from complying with your request; unless as is before observed, I had some obvious reasons to believe, the Visit of more men, than we are well assured are embarked, was intended for your Government. I am with very great esteem and Regard, Sir &c.

#### **To THE MASSACHUSETTS LEGISLATURE**

Cambridge, December 23, 1775.

Sir: Notwithstanding the great pains taken by the Quarter Master General, to procure Blankets for the Army, he finds it impossible to procure a number sufficient. he has tried the different places to the Southward without success, as what were there, are engaged to supply the wants of the Troops in each place.

Our Soldiers are in great distress and I know of no way to remedy the evil, than applying to you, cannot some

be got from the different Towns; most houses could spare one, some of them many. If your Honble. House will please to take this affair under your immediate consideration and by some means or other procure as many as can be spared from the House Keepers, you will do infinite Service to this Army and very much oblige.<sup>76</sup> Your etc.

#### **To THE MASSACHUSETTS LEGISLATURE**

Cambridge, December 29, 1775.

Gentn.: Having never considered the four independent Companies, which have been doing duty at Braintree, Weymouth and Hingham, in the same point of view, as the rest of the Army; altho some orders may have gone to or for them, Thro' the hurry of business, nor Included them in my

returns to Congress, according to the Brigade Major's report from Roxbury; I do not think myself authorised to direct pay for them, without first laying the matter before Congress, which I shall do, by inclosing an exact transcript of your representation of the case, with this single remark, that is they were not Regimented, and were doing duty at some distance from these Camps; I did not know whether to consider them, as part of the Continental Army,

76. The same letter was sent to the New Hampshire Legislature, Gov. Jonathan Trumbull, and Gov. Nicholas Cooke. Cooke succeeded in collecting 180 blankets.

and therefore had not ordered them payment heretofore.<sup>85</sup>

With respect to the other requisition, contained in your Resolve of the 20, I do not think myself at Liberty to extend the guards of this Camp, beyond Squantum and Chelsea, both fit places for Observation. This was my Sentiment of the matter, when the Committee did me the honor to call yesterday; But as it appeared to be of some importance to this Government, I did not care to determine upon it, without asking the opinion of some of the Principal Officers in this Army, whose sentiments I am happy to find, coincide with my own.

This might be assigned as one among other reasons, to shew that I did not consider these four Companies as part of the Continental Troops; That there were times, in the course of the past Summer, when I should not have Suffered them to have remained at the places they were posted, If I had conceived myself vested with Power to have withdrawn them.

I would not have it inferred from hence, that I do not think it my duty and with the greatest chearfullness, shall undertake to March Troops, If these Lines are not be exposed by it, to any Place in this or the Neighbouring Governments, to oppose an Invasion; But whilst the body of the Ministerial Troops continue in Boston, and the Circumstances of this Army remain as they are, It must be my first object to guard these Lines. I am with great respect. Gentn. &c.

85. Ford notes Samuel Adams's letter to John Adams (Jan. 15–16, 1776) on this point: “I have the opportunity of acquainting you that Congress has just received a letter from General Washington

enclosing a copy of an application of our General Assembly to him to order payment to four companies stationed at Braintree, Weymouth and Hingham. The General says they were never regimented, and he cannot comply with the request of the Assembly without the direction of Congress: A committee is appointed to consider the letter, of which I am one. I fear there will be a difficulty, and therefore I shall endeavor to prevent a report on this part of the letter, unless I see a prospect of justice being done to the Colony, till I can receive from you authentic evidence of those companies having been actually employed by the Continental officers, as I conceive they have been in the service of the Continent. I wish you would inform me whether the two companies stationed at Chelsea and Malden were paid out of the Continent's chest. I suppose they were; and if so, I cannot see reason for any hesitation about the payment of these."

**To GOVERNOR NICHOLAS COOKE**

Cambridge, January 6, 1776.

Sir: I received your favor of the 1st. Instant, and return you my thanks for the Blankets, and your promise of having more procured, as they are much wanted; I did not see Mr. Hale, who brought them, nor the account, or the money should have been transmitted you by his return. You will be pleased to draw on the Qr. Mr. General, and it shall be immediately paid. I have seen General Lee since his expedition, and hope that Rhode Island will derive some advantage from it.

I am told that Capt. Wallace's<sup>6</sup> Ships have been Supplied for some time with provisions by the Town of New Port, on certain conditions stipulated between him and the Committee. When this truce first obtained, perhaps it was right; then there might have been hopes of an accommodation taking Place; But now, when every prospect of it seems to be cut off by his Majesty's late speech, when the Throne, from which we had supplicated redress, breathes forth vengeance and indignation, and a firm determination to remain unalterable in its purposes, and to prosecute the System and plan of ruin formed by the Ministry against us; should not an end be put to it, and every possible method be fallen upon, to prevent their getting necessities of any kind? We need not expect to Conquer

our Enemies by good Offices; and I know not what pernicious consequences may result, from a precedent of this Sort; other places, circumstanced as New Port is, may follow

6. The inhabitants of Rhode Island furnished Capt. John Wallace with supplies in a similar fashion to that of New York citizens in supplying Governor Tryon and the British ships in New York Harbor. In Rhode Island, however, the matter had, for protection, taken on an aspect of a truce.

As Wallace might “cannonade, and even burn the town, a discretionary power, by a private vote, which it is designed should be kept a profound secret, is given to the commander of the forces on Rhode Island, to permit supplies, in cases of imminent danger, until the next session.” (See Governor Cooke's letter to Washington, /Jan. 21, 1776, in the *Washington Papers*.)

the example, and by that means, their whole Fleet and Army will be furnished, with what it highly concerns us to keep from them.

I received a Letter from Governor Trumbull, of the 1st. Inst., by which I am informed, that the Connecticut Assembly are very unanimous in the Common cause, and, among others, have passed an Act for raising and equipping a fourth of their Militia, to be immediately Selected by voluntary Inlistments; with such other able effective men, as are not included in their Militia Rolls, who incline to inlist, to act as Minute Men for their own, or the defence of any of the United Colonies, and this under proper encouragements. Another Act for restraining and Punishing persons Inimical to us and directing proceedings therein. No person to supply the Ministerial Army or Navy; to give them Intelligence; to Inlist or procure others to inlist in their Service, to pilot their Vessels, or in any way assist them; under pain of forfeiting his Estate, and an Imprisonment not exceeding three years. None to write, speak or Act against the proceedings of Congress, or their Acts of Assembly, under penalty of being disarmed and disqualified from holding any office, and be further punished by Imprisonment &c. For Seizing and Confiscating, for the use of the Colony, the Estates of those putting, or continuing to shelter, themselves under the protection of the Ministerial Fleet or Army, or assist in carrying on their measures against us. A Resolve to provide 2 armed Vessels, of 16 and 14 Guns, with a Spy Schooner of 4, and four Row Gallies;



an Act exempting the polls of Soldiers from taxes, for the last and ensuing Campaigns. another for encouraging the making of Salt Petre and Gunpowder. A Considerable Quantity of both Mr. Trumbull hopes to make early in the Spring, he says the furnace at Middletown is smelting Lead, and likely to turn out 20. or 30. Tons, and that ore is plenty. They have also passed an Act, impowring the Commander in Chief of the Continental Army, or officers commanding a Detachment, or out Posts, to administer an oath and swear any person or persons to the truth of matters relative to the public Service. The situation of our affairs seems to call for regulations like these, and I should think the other Colonies ought to adopt similar ones, or such of them as they have not already made; vigorous and such as at another time would appear extraordinary, are now become absolutely necessary, for preserving our Country, against the strides of Tyranny making against it.

Governor Trumbull, in his list, has not mentioned an Act for Impressing Carriages &c., agreeable to the recommendation of Congress; this I hope, they have not forgot, It is highly necessary that such an Authority should be given, under proper restrictions, or we shall be greatly Embarrassed, when ever the army, or any detachment from it, should find it necessary to march from hence. I am, etc.

**To GOVERNOR JONATHAN TRUMBULL**

Cambridge, January 7, 1776.

Sir: Your favor of the 1st Inst., I received and heartily thank you for your kind salutations. I was happy to hear of the great unanimity in your Assembly and of the several salutary Laws they passed, which shew them to be well attached to the common cause and to have taken proper measures, for supporting it.

Inclosed you have the Amount of the Lead from Crown point, agreeable to your request. The account of the Smelting furnace and your expectations to make a considerable Quantity of Salt Petre and powder pleases me much; I wish your most Sanguine endeavours may be more than answered.

As to Gun locks, it is not in my power to furnish any; the information you had was groundless, for there were no spare ones in the Ordnance Stores which fell into our hands, none were ever found that I have heard of, nor is there mention of them in the Invoice.

Having undoubted intelligence, of the fitting out a Fleet at Boston and of the embarkation of Troops from thence, which from the Season of the year and other circumstances must be destined for some expedition South of this; and having such information as I can depend upon, that the Inhabitants of Long Island in the Colony of New York, or a great part of them, are Inimical to the rights and Liberties of America, and from their conduct and professions, have discovered an apparent Inclination,

to assist in subjugating their fellow Citizens to ministerial tyranny: There is the greatest reason to believe, that this Armament, if not immediately design'd against the City of New York, is nevertheless intended against Long Island; and as it is of the utmost importance, to prevent the Enemy from possessing themselves of the City of New York and the North River, which would give them the Command of the Country and the Communication with Canada; I shall dispatch Major Genl Lee with orders to repair thither with such Volunteers, as are willing to join and can be expeditiously raised, (having no troops to spare from hence) to put the City and Fortifications on the North River, in the best posture of defence the Season and circumstances will admit of; and for disarming all such persons upon long Island or elsewhere, whose conduct and declarations, have rendered them justly suspected of designs unfriendly to the views of Congress. I have directed him to call upon the Commanding Officer of the Jersey Troops, for such Assistance as he can afford, and being informed by Capt. Sears and Mr. Woodward, who will deliver you this, and whom Genl Lee will follow in a day or two; that he apprehends 1000. or 1500. Volunteers, may be readily raised in your Government, in the Towns thro which Mr. Lee will pass; I beg the favor of you to Interpose your good offices and Interest in the Matter, to encourage men to go on this Important Service and as expeditiously as possible, for counteracting any designs our Enemies may have against us in that Quarter. Every necessary expence attending their March and Stay, will

be borne by the public. I just received advice from Chelsea, about 9 or 10 Miles from this, that several Ships have sailed from Nantasket Road, that were lying there. I shall write to the Honorable the Convention of New York, by General Lee and direct his Instructions to be laid before them; praying their Assistance to facilitate the purposes of his going. I am Sir, etc.

Boxes of Lead 19½ abt. 270 each.

### **To THE COMMITTEE OF SAFETY OF NEW YORK**

Cambridge, January 8, 1776.

Sir: Having undoubted intelligence of the fitting out of a fleet at Boston \*\*\*<sup>7</sup> there is the greatest reason to believe that this Armament, if not designed immediately against the City of New York, is, nevertheless, Intended for Long Island. I have, therefore, thought it expedient to dispatch Major Genl. Lee, with such Volunteers as he can quickly Assemble on his March, (for I have not Troops to spare from hence, if the distance and Time would admit of it),

7. The omitted portion is the same as that in Instructions to Maj. Gen. Charles Lee, this same date.

to put the City of New York in the best posture of defence, the season and circumstances will admit of.

To his Instructions, which I have desired him to lay before you, I beg leave to refer; firmly persuaded that your Honorable body, will give every assistance in their power, to facilitate the end of his coming, as there needs no other Argument, than a retrospect view of the Conduct of the Ministerial Troops in Boston and the consequences resulting from it, to prove what a fatal stab it would give to the Interests of America, to suffer the City of New York to fall into the Hands of our Enemies. I am &c.

### **To THE MASSACHUSETTS LEGISLATURE**

Cambridge, January 10, 1776.

Gentn: In the confused and disordered state of this Army, occasioned by such Capital changes, as have taken place of late, I have found it almost impossible to come at exact returns of the strength of our lines.—Not till last night, was I able to get in the whole since the dissolution of the old Army; by these I find myself weaker than I had any Idea of, and under the necessity of requesting an exertion of your Influence and Interest, to prevail upon the Militia of this Government, now in the pay of the Continent, to continue till the last of the Month and longer if requisite. I am assured, that those of New Hampshire will not stay any

longer than they engaged for; notwithstanding our weak state and the slow progress we make in recruiting, which, by the last week's report, amounts to but little more than half our usual compliment, owing, it is said, to the number of men going or expecting to go into the provincial Service, at or near their own homes.

I am more and more Covinced, that we shall never raise the Army to the New Establishment by Voluntary Inlistments; It is therefore necessary that this and the neighbouring Governments should consider in time and adopt some other expedient for effecting it.

The Hurry I was in the other day, when your Committee did me the honor to present a petition from a person (whose name I have forgot) wanting to be employ'd in the Continental Army, prevented me from being as full on the subject as I wished.

I shall beg leave therefore, at this time to add, that I hope your Honorable Board will do me the justice to believe, that it will give me pleasure, at all times, to pay a proper respect to any recommendation coming from them, and that the reason why I do not now Encourage such kind of applications as was made, is, That the New Army was arranged, as near the plan and agreeable to the orders of Congress, (altho' some unavoidable departures and changes have taken place) as it was in my power to comply with; and the officers thus constituted ordered to recruit. Every attempt therefore of others, not of this

appointment, must counteract and has been of infinite prejudice to the Service. They infuse Ideas into the minds of the Men, they have any influence over, that my engaging with them, or which is tantamount, not engaging with others, they shall be able to force themselves into the Service; of this we have numberless Instances; I am therefore Anxious to discourage every attempt of the kind, by Convincing such persons, that their engaging a Company will not bring them in. If such persons could be once convinced of this, the business of the Army would go on more smoothly and with much more regularity and order. In short Gentlemen, It is scarce possible for me to convey to you, a perfect Idea of the Trouble and vexation I have met with, in getting this matter fixed upon some settled footing. One day an officer would serve, another he would not, and so on, that I have hardly known what steps to pursue, for preserving consistency and advancing the good of the Service, which are the only Objects I have in view; I have no friend I want to bring in, nor any person with whom I am the least connected, that I wish to promote. I am Gentlemen, etc.

#### **To THE MASSACHUSETTS LEGISLATURE**

Cambridge, January 13, 1776.

Gentn: It is exceedingly painful to me, to give you so much trouble as I have, and am like to do, in the support of our Lines and arrangement of the New Army. But my difficulties, must in their consequences, devolve trouble on you.

To my very great surprize, I find that the whole number of Arms, which have been stopped from the discharged Soldiers, amount to no more than 1620; and of that number, no more than 120 are in store, the rest being redelivered to the Recruits which have come in. I also find, from the Report of the recruiting officers, that few Men are to be Inlisted, who have Arms in their hands, and that they are reduced to the Alternative, of either getting no Men, or Men without Arms. Unhappy Situation; what is to be done, unless these Governments will exert themselves in providing Arms from the Several Towns, or in such other manner, as to them shall seem speedy and effectual.

To account for this great deficiency, would be tedious and not much to the purpose,— Suffice it generally to say, that it has arisen from two causes;—the badness of the Arms of the old Army, which the Inspectors and Valuers of, did not think fit to

detain; and to the disobedient Regiments, which in spite of every order I could Issue to the Contrary, (even to solemn threat of stopping the pay for the Months of November and December, of all those who should carry away their Arms) have, in a manner by stealth borne them away.

I am glad to hear, by a Gentn. of your Honble. Body, who does me the Honor to be the bearer of this Letter, that you have for sometime past been Collecting Arms at Watertown, whilst a good deal of dispatch has been used in making them elsewhere. I beg to know how many I can rely upon, as the recruits now coing in from the Country, will be useless without. It is to no purpose I find, to depend upon Imported Arms; what you can furnish, I must take in behalf of the Continent, and will upon Notice, send some Gentleman to receive them. Will it be prudent to apply to such of the Militia, as are going away, for their Arms? leaving It optional in them, cannot be amiss, but will the Necessity of the case Justify the policy of detaining them; I ask for Information. being with great truth etc.

## **TO THE NEW HAMPSHIRE LEGISLATURE**

Cambridge, January 13, 1776.

Sir: I am sorry, that I should have so often troubled you

respecting this Army, and that I am under the necessity of applying to you again.

To my great surprise Sir, I find, that notwithstanding I have taken the utmost pains to prevent the soldiers that would not reenlist in the New Army from carrying away their Arms, or such of them as were good, that the whole number collected amounts only to 1620, of which there are no more than 120 now in store; the rest being delivered to the Recruits, which have come in.

I also find from the Report of the recruiting officers, that few men are to be inlisted, who have Arms in their Hands, and that they are reduced to the disagreeable alternative, of getting men without any, or no men at all. Unhappy situation! What is to be done? Must not these Governments exert themselves in procuring them from the several Towns, or in such other manner, as to them shall seem most effectual and Speedy.\*\*\*<sup>16</sup>

The prospect of getting Imported Arms, is so remote and uncertain that I cannot depend upon it. I therefore request the

16. The omission is the same as the third paragraph in the letter to the Massachusetts Legislature of this same date.

favor of you, to inform me, whether you have any and what number belonging to the Government, as also If you will be able to procure more and in what time. If you have any or can get' them, I shall be glad to take them on account of the United Colonies. They must be had if possible. I have wrote to the Honble. Genl. Court of this province about the same, but have not received their Answer. Should any of your Militia be here, when I get your Answer, will it be prudent to apply to them for their Arms; leaving it optional in them cannot be amiss.—But will the necessity of the case justify an Involuntary detention of them? I ask for Information. I am Sir, &c.

## **To THE MASSACHUSETTS LEGISLATURE**

Cambridge, January 16, 1776.

Genl.: Your several Resolves, in consequence of my Letters of the 10th and 15th inst., have been presented to me by a Committee of your Honble. Body.<sup>23</sup> I thank you for the assurances, of being zealously disposed to do every thing in your power to facilitate the recruiting the American Army, and at the same time that I assure you, I do not entertain a doubt of the truth of it, I must beg leave to add, that I conceive you have mistaken the meaning of my Letter of the 10th., if you suppose it ever was my Idea, that you should offer a bounty at the seperate expence of this Colony.

It was not clear to me, but that some coercive measures might be used on this, as on former occasions, to draft men to compleat the Regiments upon the Continental Establishment: But as this is thought unadvisable, I shall rely on your recommending to the selectmen and committees of Correspondence &c. to exert themselves in their several Towns, to promote the Inlistments for the American Army.<sup>24</sup>

In the mean while, as there is an appearance of this service going on but slowly, and it is necessary to have a respectable Body of Troops here as soon as possible, to act as circumstances shall require; I must beg that you will order in, with as much expedition as the Nature of the Case will admit of, Seven Regts. agreeable to the establishment of this Army, to continue in

23. See Washington's letter to The Massachusetts Legislature, Jan. 10, 1776, *ante*. The letter of January 15 merely referred an expense account to the legislature for payment.

24. Ford quotes from James Warren's letter to Samuel Adams (January 14): "I think the service has suffered and the enlistments been embarrassed, by the low state in which you keep your treasury here. Had the general been able to have paid off the old army to the last of December, when their term expired, and to give assurances for the pay of the militia when their continuance in the army should end, it might have produced many good effects—among others added some thousands to the army. You will be surprised, perhaps, when I tell you there is but about 10,000 dollars here; and that left by the necessary parsimony of the general, not knowing what occasion there might be for a little. The time for which our militia came in, ends to-morrow. We have presumed so much on the public spirit of our countrymen as to make no other provision, though everything depends on their staying, and they wish to be at home. Our house adjourned yesterday morning, and the members went down among them to use their influence. I flatter myself most of them will stay to the last of this month." (See *Proceedings of the Massachusetts Historical Society*, vol. 14, p. 277.)



Service till the 1st of April, If required. You will be pleased to direct, that the Men come provided with good Arms, Blankets, Kettles for cooking, and if possible, with Twenty rounds of Powder and Ball.

With respect to your other resolve relative to arms, I am quite ready to make an absolute purchase, of such as shall be furnished either by the Colony or Individuals. I am also ready to engage payment for all the Arms, which shall be furnished by the Recruits, if lost in the Public Service; but I do not know how far I could be justified in allowing for the use of them; when I know it to be the opinion of Congress, that every Man shall furnish his own Arms, or pay for the use of them, if put in his hands. To do otherwise, is an Indirect way of raising the pay. I again wish that the Honble: Court could devise some method of purchasing.

I beg leave to return my thanks for the kind offer of Fifty thousand Pounds for the Continental use. I will accept of a Loan upon the terms mentioned, of half that sum; to secure payment of the Militia, whose time of Service will be up the last of this Month; till when I shall not have occasion to make use of the Money. I am etc.

**To GOVERNOR JONATHAN TRUMBULL**

Cambridge, January 16, 1776.

Sir: The alarming and almost defenceless state of our Lines,

occasioned by the slow progress in raising recruits for the New Army, and the departure of a great number of Militia, which had been called in for their support, till the 15th. Inst., from this and New Hampshire Governments, rendered it necessary for us to summon the General Officers in Council, to determine on proper measures to be adopted for their maintainance and preservation. For this purpose they met at Headquarters yesterday and to day and finding that it was with the utmost difficulty and persuasion, that such part of the latter as are now here, had been prevail'd on to continue till the last of the Month; after which there is not the remotest probability of their staying one moment; they have judged it expedient and absolutely necessary that thirteen Regiments should

be forthwith raised, equal to those of the New Establishment, to be officered according to the usual mode of their respective Governments, which are to repair to this Camp by the last instant if possible; to be in readiness to Act in such manner and till the 1st April, as Circumstances may require. Of this number, they apprehend the Massachusetts should furnish seven, your Government four and New Hampshire two, being agreeable to the proportion settled by Congress.

In order that each Regiment may consist of a proper number of officers and men, I herewith send you a list for their regulation, as also of the Continental pay.

I must earnestly solicit your regard to Arms, Amunition, Blankets, Cloathing and Kettles, that they may come

as well provided with these necessary articles as they can, particularly the first, of which I find to my great surprise and concern there is an amazing deficiency; notwithstanding I have used every precaution my Judgment could point out to procure them. Besides the Arms which these Regiments will bring with them I shall be particularly obliged by your furnishing me for the use of the Continent with such others, as you have or can Collect. If you have any, or can get them made, you will please to inform me of the Quantity. These Governments I hope will exert themselves in this instance. they must be had, or what can, what will be done.

The great and constant attention Sir, which you have shewn on all occasions to promote the public cause, affords me the strongest assurance, that your every exertion and Interest will be employed, to comply with these several requisitions. I am Sir, &c.

**To GOVERNOR NICHOLAS COOKE**

Cambridge, January 16, 1776.

Sir: It is exceedingly painful to me, that I should have so often troubled you respecting this Army, and that I am under the necessity of applying to you again; but you must in some measure be Involved in whatever difficulties attend me, in this instance.

To my great surprise Sir, I find that notwithstanding I have taken the greatest care to prevent the Soldiers that would not reinlist in the New Army, from carrying away their Arms or such of them as were good; that the Number collected is trifeling and inconsiderable, of which there are but few, if any, now in store, they being delivered to the Recruits that have come in. \*\*\*<sup>25</sup> The prospect of getting Imported Arms is so remote and uncertain, that I cannot depend upon it: I therefore request the favor of you to inform me, whether you have any, and what number belonging to the Government; and also whether you will be able to procure more and in what time. If you have any

25. The omission is, practically, the first paragraph of Washington's letter to Congress, Jan. 14, 1776, *q. v.*

or can get them, I shall be glad to take them on account of the Continent. They must be had if possible. I have wrote to the other New England Governments upon the same subject. I am Sir, etc.

#### **To THE NEW HAMPSHIRE LEGISLATURE**

Cambridge, January 16, 1776.

The alarming and almost defenceless state of our Lines, occasioned by the slow progress of raising recruits for the New Army and the departure of a great number of the Militia, which had been called in for their Support, till the 15th Instant, from this and New Hampshire Governments; rendered it necessary for me to Summon the General Officers in Council, to determine on proper measures to be adopted for their maintenance and preservation.

For this purpose, they met at Head Quarters yesterday and to day and finding that it was with the utmost difficulty and persuasion that such part of the latter, as are now here, had been prevailed on to continue till the last of the Month; after which there is not the remotest probability of their staying one moment; they have judged it expedient and absolutely necessary, that thirteen Regiments should be forthwith raised, equal to those of the New Establishment, to be officered

according to the usual mode of their respective Governments, which are to repair to this Camp by the last Instant, if possible, to be in readiness to act in such manner and till

the 1st of April, as circumstances may require; of this Number they apprehend the Massachusetts should furnish seven, Connecticut four, and your Government two, being agreeable to the proportion settled by Congress.

In order that each Regiment may consist of a proper number of officers and men, I herewith send you a list for their regulation, as also of the Continental Pay.

I must earnestly solicit your regard to Arms, Amunition, Blankets, Clothing and Kettles, that they may come as well provided with these necessary Articles as they can, particularly the first; of which I find, to my great surprize and concern, there is an amazing deficiency; notwithstanding, I have used every precaution my judgment could point out, to procure them.

The great and constant attention Sir, which you have shewn upon all occasions to promote the public cause, affords me the strongest assurance, that your every exertion and Interest will be employed, to comply with these several requisitions. I am Sir &c.

## **To THE MASSACHUSETTS LEGISLATURE**

Cambridge, January 19, 1776.

Gentn.: The inclosures, herewith sent, convey such full Accounts,

of the sad reverse of our affairs in Canada, as to render it unnecessary for me, in my present hurry, to add ought to the Tale.

Your spirited Colony will, I have no doubt, be sufficiently Impressed with the expediency of a vigorous exertion, to prevent the evils which must follow from the repulse of our Troops. It does not admit of a doubt, but that Genl. Carlton will improve this advantage to the utmost; And, if he should be able to give another Current of Sentiments to the Canadians and Indians, than those they

seemed Inclined to adopt, words are unnecessary, to describe the Melancholly effect, that must Inevitably follow.

I am persuaded, therefore, that you will exert yourselves to the utmost, to throw in the reinforcement, by the Route mentioned in General Schuyler's Letter, that is now required of your Colony; as the doing of it expeditiously, may prove a Matter of the utmost Importance.

You will perceive, by the Minutes of the Council of War Inclosed, that the Regiment, asked of you for Canada, is one of the Seven applied for in my Letter of the 16th Inst., and that the only difference, with respect to the requisition, is the length of time and place of Service; as no good would result from sending Troops to Canada, for a shorter period than the Continental Army is raised for, to wit, till the first of January 1777. I am, Gentn. &c.<sup>33</sup>

33. Copies of the same letter were sent to the New Hampshire Legislature and to Gov. Jonathan Trumbull. They are in the writing of George Baylor.

## **To GOVERNOR JONATHAN TRUMBULL**

Cambridge, January 20, 1776.

Sir: Your favor of the 18th. Inst., I received this day for which I return you my thanks.

Upon receiving the Melancholy Intelligence of the fall of the brave Montgomery and the repulse of our Troops, in their attempt against the City of Quebec; I called a Council of Genl. Officers to determine upon the necessary steps to be taken upon the alarming occasion; of their determination, I wrote you yesterday, to which I beg leave to refer you.

The early attention, which you and your Honorable Council have paid to this Important business, has anticipated my requisition and claims in a particular manner the thanks of every well wishing American.

I am in hopes by this time, that several are on their March, and that with the Troops which will follow from your Government, this and New Hampshire; that our affairs in a little time in that Quarter, will wear a more promising aspect, than what they now do. I am Sir &ca.

**To GOVERNOR JONATHAN TRUMBULL**

Cambridge, January 21, 1776.

Sir: In the hurry of my last dispatches to you of the 19th Inst. I forgot to Intimate, that for the Encouragement of the Regt. destined for Canada, a Month's advanced pay will be allowed Officers and Soldiers by me, in behalf of the Congress. At the same time I think it but right, that you should be apprized of the Intention of this Government, to advance their Regt another Month's pay, to enable the men to provide for so long and fatiguing a March, and in the mean time have something for their families to subsist on, during their absence.

I have no doubt, but that this last advance will be pleasing to Congress, and that the Money will be speedily refunded; but as I have no Authority to direct it, and would not appear by any Act of mine, to put these three Regiments for Canada, upon a different footing from those, which have been raising for this Army; I only give you a hint of the Intention of this Government, if you think proper, that the Regiment from your Colony may be placed upon the same footing; as I know all kind of distinctions are considered by Troops with an evil and Jealous Eye.

Such necessaries, as are absolutely requisite for the Men of this Regiment, you will please to have provided upon the best terms you can, and a regular Account with Vouchers thereof kept, that payment may be made. The Importance of dispatch, will I am persuaded, appear in so urgent and pressing a light to you, that I need add nothing on this head, but shall be glad to hear what progress you make in the business, being with the sincerest regard and esteem. Sir &c.<sup>37</sup>

37. The same letter was also sent to the New Hampshire Legislature.

## **To GOVERNOR JONATHAN TRUMBULL**

Cambridge, January 25, 1776.

Sir: I received your favor of the 22d Inst., and am much obliged by your Assurance, that the three Regiments of Militia for this Camp, will be raised as fast as possible; they are much wanted. I wish it was in my power to facilitate their march, by sending a necessary supply of Money for it, but it is not,

as our Treasury is exhausted, I hope in a little time it will be replenished, with a Sufficient Sum to answer every demand.

I am very sorry that Arms are so scarce with you, that none can be furnished on Account of the Continent, at this critical period. I know not what will be done. Those of the three Regiments, they will be allowed to carry away when their Service is ended, unless they choose to sell them. I will gladly buy, but never had an Idea of detaining them against their consent.

For the Arms which were detained and Appraized, I have given Warrants to the Several Colonels to whose Regiments they belonged, upon the pay Master Genl., as fast as the number and Value have been brought in, and will take care to have a return made you. I am &c.

## **To THE MASSACHUSETTS LEGISLATURE**

Cambridge, January 31, 1776.

Sir: Mr. Glover called upon the General this day informing him, that the Legislative Power of this Province, were about making some Alterations or Amendment in the Act relative to Captures made by Armed Vessels, fitted out of this Colony, so as to make that Act conformable to the

resolutions of Congress. He also mentioned that some difficulties may arise after Condemnation, respecting the Sale of Prizes made by the Continental Vessels, as it seems the deputy Sherrif is ordered to take charge of, and Sell the Prizes made by Vessels, fitted out by individuals, or

otherwise. That will certainly militate with the agreement entered into by his Excellency with the Agents appointed by him, who are to have a Certain Commission and no more, for transacting that business. Now Sir, I am ordered by the General to lay the Matter before you, requesting that no future impediments may arise, after Condemnation of these Vessels, to interrupt the Sale of them and Cargoes. A clause in this particular, enacting that all Vessels taken by the Cruizers fitted out at the Continental expence, shall be given up to the Agents appointed for negotiating that business, immediately after Condemnation, will answer every purpose of this application to you.

I have the Honor to inclose you a Resolve of Congress, empowering the paymaster General of this Army to draw Bills on the President, with an extract, from his Letter to his Excellency on the same subject. I am Sir, etc.<sup>67</sup>

67. This letter in the “Letter Book,” *Washington Papers*, is in the writing of George Lewis, but the Varick Transcripts give the signature as Washington's. Lacking the letter sent, it is difficult to determine who signed it. The resolve of Congress referred to is that of January 16.

**To TIMOTHY PICKERING, JUNIOR**

Cambridge, February 1, 1776.

Sir: Your favor of yesterday I received and am sorry to hear, that the Quota of Militia, which the Town of Salem was to furnish by Resolve of the Honorable General Court, cannot be had. The generous tender of Services made by you, Sir, and the rest of the Volunteers claims a return of my sincere thanks;—should I have occasion to call upon them, I shall do it; at present I wish them to continue at Salem and to hold themselves in readiness. I am, Sir, etc.

**To GOVERNOR JONATHAN TRUMBULL**

Cambridge, February 8, 1776.



Sir: I last night received Intelligence of the arrival of some Powder in your Colony by the Sloop Macaroni, and the report is that she brought Arms too. As my last Letters from Philadelphia, do not Promise me an Immediate supply of these necessities, and as the exigency of this Army at this particular crisis, calls for much more than what we have, I beg the favor of you to Interest yourself, that they may be sent to this Camp, as expeditiously as possible. If they belong to the Colony, I will take them on the Continents Account, and pay for them, or replace the Powder, If that shall be thought more advisable, as soon as I have an opportunity of doing it, which I hope will not be long. If to private Gentlemen, I shall be much obliged by your friendly exertions that I may have it. I should have made this application, did not the state of our affairs at this time require all that can be collected, not doubting of your last endeavours that my requisition may be complied with, I am Sir, etc.

**To GOVERNOR JONATHAN TRUMBULL**

Cambridge, February 9, 1776.

Sir: I received your favors of the 2d. and 5th Inst., and agreeable to your request have ordered payment for the Ballance of the Expences attending the Journey of the two French Gentlemen to Philadelphia to be made to William Bacon, Postrider, for your use, which I hope will come safe to hand.

I am happy to hear of your having received 12,500 dolls. from Congress for the Troops going upon the Canada expedition and heartily wish, that no other difficulties may occur to impede their march and prevent their giving early and timely succour to our friends there, which they certainly stand in great need of.

As to replacing the Money advanced by your Colony to the Regiments which served the last Campaign; It is not in my power. It is what I did not expect and therefore have made no provision for it. I should have paid them in the same manner I did others, had I not been prevented by the Colonels, who expressed their Inclination to receive the whole at one time, after the expiration

of the Service and on their return home.—This being the case, I always imagined, that the sum advanced by you, would be taken in, when Congress came to form a General Account against the Colonies, and be applied to your Credit, which I presume they will shortly do, as I have wrote to them and pointed out the Necessity of having all the Accounts respecting this Army, adjusted and liquidated at proper periods.—

Had I conceived, that this application for Repayment would have been made to me, I should certainly have included the sum advanced by you in my estimates and taken care to have had a sufficiency of Money to discharge it. But as I did not, I am unprovided and have not more than will answer the Claims I was apprized of, antecedent to the last day of December. They are large and numerous, and in a few days, will drain our Treasury of every shilling now in it. I am exceedingly sorry that Matters should be so circumstanced, as to give you the least disappointment or trouble, But I doubt not Congress upon your application, will refund what you have advanced, or settle it in such a way, as shall be perfectly agreeable to you.

I shall take care, to have the three Battallions of Militia paid, which are coming here for the defence of our Lines in the same Manner, that the rest are when the time of their engagement expires. They certainly might have come thus far without the advance you have been obliged to give.

Having lately examined into the State of our Powder and finding the deficiency to be much greater than what I had any Idea of, and hearing that the Militia from your Colony, and I fear from the others too, are coming without any, or with but very little, I cannot but confess my anxiety and concern to be very great; I therefore again repeat the request I made this Morning, and beg and intreat your most strenuous and friendly exertions, to procure what we are told is Imported, or such part as you

possibly can, and send it to me with the utmost expedition. I am already much alarmed on account of the scarcity, and the Militia coming in without a proper supply, fills me with apprehensions of the most disagreeable nature. this I would mention in confidence, as it might give great uneasiness

if it was generally known, and trusting that nothing in your honor will be wanting to relieve us at this alarming and Important crisis. I am &ca.

**To THE COMMITTEE OF SAFETY OF NEW YORK**

Cambridge, February 10, 1776.

Sir: Being in the greatest want of Arms at this alarming and important Crisis, for the Army under my Command, without the most distant prospect or hope of getting more from these Governments, than what I already have; I beg leave to solicit the favors of your Committee of Safety in this Instance, and earnestly request, that they will use their exertions to get and send to me, in the most expeditious Manner, all that they can possibly procure. I imagine that there are several belonging to the Colony, and have been informed of many Tories

being disarmed, and therefore expect, that it will be in their power to obtain me a considerable supply; Whatever Quantity is sent me, I will take on the Continental Account and make payment for, with the Expences Incident to their transportation. This application being founded in necessity and arising from the exigency of our affairs, I make no doubt will meet your most ready and early attention, and that nothing will be wanting on your Part, to give me the most speedy relief. I am Sir, etc.

P.S. I wish to have only such Arms as are good and serviceable, and shall be glad to have Bayonets with them.

**To THE MASSACHUSETTS LEGISLATURE**

Cambridge, February 10, 1776.

Gentn: Notwithstanding I have taken every method my Judgment could Suggest, to procure a sufficient number of Firelocks for the Soldiers of this Army, by applications to the Assemblies and Conventions of these Governments, as well as by sending Officers out with Money to Purchase; I am constrained by necessity to Inform you, that the deficiency is amazingly great, and that there

are not nigh enough to Arm the Troops already here. It is true, that all the Officers gone upon the business, are not yet returned, but from the small success of those who have made

report, I cannot promise myself many more; I must therefore beg leave to Sollicit your kind attention to this Interesting and Important concern, and would submit it to your Consideration whether if your Honorable Court were to depute some of their Members to make application to the different Towns, they might not procure a Considerable Quantity. I will most chearfully furnish them with Money for the purpose, or pay for them on their delivery here, as you shall think most advisable. I shall only add, that I hope the Exigency of our affairs at this critical crisis, will excuse this request and my confidence of your readiness and zeal, to do every thing in your power for promoting the public good; and am Gentln. etc.

P S I have heard that there are several King's Muskets in the Country, for every good one with a Bayonet, that have not been abused, I will give 12 Dollars,—and in proportion for other Guns fit for Service.

**To GOVERNOR JONATHAN TRUMBULL**

Cambridge, February 15, 1776.

Sir: Your favor of the 12th Instant I received, and beg leave to inform you, that I should have most certainly contrived, to have spared you some Money for the Troops going to Canada, pressing as the demands against me were, had I not been advised of the supply sent you by Congress for that purpose.

I shall be glad to know, whether, when I pay the Militia from your Government, I am to give Warrants only for the ballance, after deducting the three Dollars pr Man advanced by your Committee of pay Table, and whether I am to refund what they paid, after the Militia have served the time they are engaged for. the whole of them are not yet come in, but I imagine it will not belong first.

I am much obliged and return you my sincere thanks, for ordering the Powder from Providence to this Camp, in this Time of necessity, and will most chearfully pay for it, or replace it, when in my power, as shall be most agreeable to you; And also for the Arms you are good enough to promise to send me as they are exceedingly wanted. I wish you could have added a Cypher or two to the Number.

I had received almost a Similar Letter from General Lee, to the one you have favored me with, before yours came to hand; and also heard of the arrival of Powder, Salt Petre and Arms at Philadelphia. My Accounts, only make the Powder 15 Tons, be that as it may, It is an event of much Importance to us, and I hope will be soon followed by more. I am &c.

**To GOVERNOR JONATHAN TRUMBULL**

Cambridge, February 19, 1776.

Sir: I am grieved to find, that instead of Six or eight thousand weight of Powder, which I fondly expected to receive from Providence (agreeable to your Letter), that I am likely to get only 4217 lb, Including the 3000 Weight belonging to this Province (If to be had). My situation in respect to this Article, is really distressing, and while common prudence obliges me to keep my want of it concealed, to avoid a discovery thereof to the Enemy; I feel the bad effect of that concealment from our friends, For not believing our distress equal to what it really is they withhold such small supplies as are in their power to give; I am so restrained in all my Military movements, for want of these necessary supplies, that it is impossible to undertake anything effectual; and whilst I am fretting, at my own disagreeable

situation, the World I suppose is not behind hand in censuring my inactivity. A Golden Opportunity has been lost, perhaps not to be acquired again, this year. The late freezing weather had formed some pretty strong Ice from Dorchester to Boston Neck, and from Roxbury to the Common; which would have afforded a less dangerous approach to the Town, than through the Lines, or by water. The advantage of this, added to a thorough conviction of the Importance of destroying the

Ministerial Troops in Boston, before they can be reinforced, and to a belief that a bold and resolute Assault, aided in some small degree by Artillery and Mortars, might be crowned with Success; I proposed the Attempt a day or two ago to the General Officers, but they thought, and perhaps rightly, that' such an Enterprize in our present weak State of Men (for the Militia are not yet all arrived) and deficiency of Powder, would be attended with too much hazard, and therefore that we had better wait the arrival of the last, and then to begin a Bombardment in earnest.

This matter is mentioned to you in confidence;—your zeal, activity and Attachment to the cause, renders it unnecessary to conceal it from you, or our real stock of Powder; which after furnishing the Militia (unfortunately coming in without, and will require upwards of 50 Barrels and compleating our other Troops to 24 Rounds a Man; which are less by one half than the Regulars have, and having a few Rounds of Cannon Cartridges fitted for immediate use, will leave us not more than 100 Barrels in

store, for the greatest emergency, Inclusive of the 4217 lb from Providence, If we get it.

This my Dear Sir, is Melancholy! But it is a truth, and at the same time, that it may serve to convey, some Idea of my disagreeable feelings under a knowledge of It, will evince the necessity of Vigorous exertions, to throw without delay, every ounce that can be procured, into this Camp; otherwise the great expence of sending in the Militia will be intirely sunk, without any possible good resulting from it, but much evil, as they will contribute not a little to the consumption of our Amunition &c &c.

For want perhaps of better Information, I cannot help giving it as my opinion, that at a time when our Military Operations are intirely at a stand, for want of Powder principally and Arms; It is inconsistent with good policy, to hoard up Town Stocks of either; better it is, to fight an Enemy at a distance, than at one's door. Prudence indeed points out the expediency of providing for private as well as Public Exigencies; But if both are not to be done, I should think there can be no hesitation in the Choice; as the Army now raised and supported at a Considerable expence, can be of little use,

if it is not sufficient to prevent an Enemy from disturbing the quiet of the interior Towns of these Governments. I am &c.

**To GOVERNOR JONATHAN TRUMBULL**

Cambridge, February 22,<sup>97</sup> 1776.

Sir: In my Letter to you of the 19th Inst., I mentioned that I was sorry to find, that there would come but 4217 lb. of Powder instead of 6 or 8000. I had expectations of. I had taken my Information from Governor Cooke's Letter, which upon a reperusal, I find mentions that weight including the Casks. I have since had it weighed by the Commissary an exact return of which you have inclosed, by which you will see that the Neat weight is 3577 pounds. 577 Pounds thereof will be placed to the Credit of your Colony, and the whole settled for in whatever Manner will be most agreeable.

I have just received a Letter from John Huntington Esq, with the agreeable account, of his having forwarded two Tons of Powder to this Camp, by your order. Accept Sir, of my thanks for this seasonable supply; when it arrives I shall send you an Account of it, and when you point out the Mode, it shall be paid for or replaced in the Manner you and the rest of your Legislature shall think proper. I have nothing now at present to communicate to you from hence, but you may be assured that, I am etc.

**To THE MASSACHUSETTS LEGISLATURE**

Cambridge, February 26, 1776.

Genl: As I am making all possible preparation to take

97. On this day Washington wrote a short note to Maj. Gen. Charles Lee advising him of the nonreceipt of any letter, and that "I need not mention my Impatience to hear from you, and beg that you will write me by every Opportunity." The "Letter Book" copy is in the *Washington Papers*.

possession of the Heights of Dorchester (which I expect I shall be able to accomplish by the latter end of this Week). It is expected that this, if any thing can, will bring the Enemy out of Boston to oppose, as at Charlestown, our Erecting any Works there.—To weaken our Lines on the North side of Cambridge River, to strengthen those of Dorchester, before any movement is made that way by the Enemy, may neither be consistent with prudence or good policy, and to delay it till after an Attack is begun would be too late, as the Contest will soon be decided for or against us after this happens.

Under this state of the Matter and to avoid putting an affair of so much Importance to a doubtful Issue, when under Providence, it may be reduced to a certainty; I submit it to the Wisdom of your Board; whether it might not be best to direct the Militia of certain Towns most contiguous to Dorchester and Roxbury, to repair to the Lines at those places with their Arms, Ammunition and Accoutrements instantly upon a Signal given.

If you approve of this, you will please to fix with General Thomas (who waits on you for that purpose) upon the Signal to be given and Issue your Notices Accordingly. I have the honor etc.

**To GOVERNOR JONATHAN TRUMBULL**

Head Quarters, Cambridge, March 9, 1776.

Sir: The important Post of Dorchester Hill, which has long been the object of our particular attention, and which for various weighty reasons I had hitherto delayed taking possession of, I have the pleasure to inform you is now so well secured, that I flatter myself it will not be in the power of the Enemy to disposess us. A detachment of twenty-five hundred Men, under Command of Brigr General Thomas on Monday Evening last, begun the Works there, which they have carried on ever since without the least molestation from the Enemy. For two or three nights previous to this, I thought it necessary to draw off their Attention from the grand object, and accordingly ordered a brisk Cannonade and bombardment of the Town, which (as I have been since informed) had the desired Effect for they had no suspicion of our real design, 'till Tuesday Morning, when they



discovered our Troops in possession of the Hill. A Captain of a Transport, who made his escape from Boston the Night before last, informs me that three thousand Men under Command of Lord Piercy, were ordered to disposess us, but the Weather being very tempestuous (or perhaps for some better reason) the expedition was laid aside; He also informs me that they were making every preparation to evacuate the Town. They have indeed been observed for several days past, to be very busily employed in removing their Cannon and Ammunition, and yesterday in the Afternoon the Captain's intelligence was confirmed by

a Flagg of Truce sent out, with a Message from the Selectmen of the Town; a Copy of which I have the honor to inclose you. It seems very evident that they can no longer keep possession of the Town, and are determined to take post, or attack in some other Quarter; where that may be is at present altogether uncertain, but I thought it my duty to give you the earliest information of this important movement, that you might take proper measures for the Security of your Colony. I have ordered their motions to be very narrowly watched, and if any thing material should occur you may rely on my giving you speedy Notice.

I have also the pleasure to acquaint you that Capt Manly and others, have taken another Transport Ship laden with Coals, Porter &c. for the use of the Ministerial Troops at Boston, She brings papers to the 2d December, but they afford no material News.

An Armed Transport is also stranded on the back of Cape Codd; The most of her cargo consisting principally of a few military stores, has been secured by the Inhabitants the Master, two Midshipmen, and a number of Seaman made prisoners. She was bound from Boston to New York. I have the Honor to be with great respect, Sir, etc.<sup>29</sup>

29. Letters of the same import were sent to Governor Cooke and the New Hampshire Legislature.

## **To THE NEW HAMPSHIRE LEGISLATURE**

Cambridge, March 14, 1776.

Sir: Your favor of the 12th Instant I just now received and beg leave to assure you that the approbation which your Honbl. Council are pleased to express of my Conduct respecting the Operations against the Town of Boston, affords me the highest satisfaction.

I am exceedingly sorry that it is not in my power at this time to comply with your requisition for powder and to make a return of what was generously lent for the Continental use, the low state of our store of that necessary Article, will not allow me to spare the smallest quantity, but hoping that I may get a further supply before long to enable me to do It, I shall be much obliged, If you will favor me with an account of what you furnished, that it may be repaid as soon as circumstances will admit of It. I am Sir, &c.

**To GOVERNOR NICHOLAS COOKE**

Cambridge, March 17, 1776.

Sir: I have the Pleasure to inform you, that this morning the Ministerial Troops evacuated the Town of Boston, without destroying it.<sup>39</sup> and that we are now in the full possession; upon which event, I beg leave to Congratulate you, and sincerely wish,

39. An account of the evacuation, in the *Boston Gazette*, states that the enemy was seen to march from Bunker Hill about 9 a. m., and at the same time a great many boats. filled with troops, put off from Boston for the fleet, which lay below Castle William. Part of the Continentals came down the river from Cambridge by boats and landed at Sewells Point. General Ward's troops advanced from Roxbury and entered Boston from that direction. The command of the town was entrusted to General Putnam.

if the Ministry persevere in the same unconstitutional and despotic measures, which too long have marked their conduct, that our opposition and resistance, in every Quarter, may be crowned with the success they have been here.

Where their destination is, or what plans they have in view, is altogether unknown; most probably the next attempt will be against New York, or some more Southern Colony. However, I should think, tho' I do not believe they have any design against Rhode Island, that it will be adviseable to keep a strict look out; and submit it to you, whether it may not be proper against the time you apprehend they might arrive, to call in a number of the Militia and have them posted in proper places. I do not mean to direct the Measure, but only to mention It for your Consideration; to me it appears worthy of attention. I am &c.

N. B. March 19th, the Fleet is still in King and Nantasket Roads.

**To GOVERNOR NICHOLAS COOKE**

Cambridge, March 21, 1776.

Sir: Your favors of the 18th and 19th Insts. I received, and am extremely sorry to hear that your Militia are so deficient in Arms. I fear the misfortune is too common, nor do I know how it will be remedied. In this Army, altho' I have pursued every mode I could devise for procuring them, there is still a great

deficiency and a considerable number of Men without any in their hands. The peculiar situation of Rhode Island and its extensive Sea Coast, had not escaped my mind; I well know the Enemy have it in their Power to do it considerable damage, unless there is a Sufficient force to repel their Attempts: But it is the opinion of the General Officers here, that their destination is against New York, the Importance of which, as it secures the free and only Communication between the Northern and Southern Colonies, which will be intirely cut off by their possessing it, and give them the Command of Hudson's River and an easy pass into Canada; makes it absolutely and indispensably necessary, for the whole of this Army, which is but inconsiderable, (except that part of It which will be left here to secure the Stores, Barracks and other Public property), to be marched from hence for its defence with all possible expedition. It is an object that should Command our first attention, and if lost, will be of the most fatal consequence to us in the present unhappy and

Interesting struggle. Least any Attempts should be made against you, I shall give orders to the Officers Commanding Brigades, If they have intelligence of an Invasion, upon their March, that they forthwith return to your Succour. I shall also Order the Officer, who will be left here, to do the same with the Troops under his Command, whenever occasion may require It.

Agreeable to the request made by you and your Honble General Assembly, I shall with chearfulness and pleasure

direct some of the last divisions that go from hence, to puruse the Route you wish, If they can be accomodated with Covering and Provision, and shall be ever ready and happy to render Rhode Island or any other place any Services in my power that may be compatible with the General good. I am Sir, with sentiments of the highest regard, Your and theirs &c.

**To GOVERNOR JONATHAN TRUMBULL**

Cambridge, March 21, 1776.

Sir: I received your favor of the 18th Inst. and concur with you in opinion, that their Women and Children with the Tory families will most probably go to Halifax; this is what I meant and alluded to, having never suspected that they (especially the latter) would go to New York.

I am extremely obliged by your friendly hint and shall ever receive them with pleasure, But I do not think that they were apprehensive of an attack from our Side, but rather preparing to make one; However let their designs have been what they may, I have the satisfaction to inform you, that on Sunday Morning last they totally evacuated the Town, and we are now in full possession, upon which event, I beg leave to congratulate you and more so, as the Town is in a much better situation than was expected; added to this, they have left by means of their percipitate retreat, Stores of one kind and another, to a pretty

considerable amount, a particular detail of which or estimate of their value, I have not yet got. Notwithstanding they have abandoned the Town, and there have been favorable winds for their

departure, they are still lying with their fleet in Nantasket Road, but for what purpose, is a matter of much conjecture; some supposing their Vessels to have been loaded with such hurry and confusion, as to be unfit for Sea and to require sundry things and arrangements to be settled previous to their going out; But for my own part, I cannot but suspect they are waiting for some opportunity to give us a Stroke, at a moment when they conceive us to be off guard, in order to retrieve the honor they have lost by their shameful and scandalous retreat, diminishing from that Lustre and renown which British Armies were wont to boast and justly claimed as their right. Suspecting them of such motives, I shall not detach any more of the Army, than what is gone already; until they have taken their departure and quitted the Coast.

I heartily thank you for your kind attention to my last requisition, and am glad that the Companies you have ordered are of the Militia, the trouble and Inconveniences occasioned by them, being far less than what generally attend Volunteers. Nothing but Necessity and the Importance of New York to us in the present contest, could have induced the application and therefore as soon as they can be spared, by the arrival of our Army, they will be at Liberty to return home to their

common and necessary employments, except such as choose to Inlist and continue in Service.

In compliance with your request, I shall direct the Troops or some of them, that go from hence, after the Ministerial Fleet are gone, to pursue their rout on or near the Sea Coast, If they can be accomodated with Covering and Provision; that they may be ready to oppose the Enemy, in case they make any attempt upon your Colony, about the time of their going, tho' that is what I do not apprehend, I rather suppose when they once set out, that they will repair to New York or where ever bound with all possible despatch, to secure the place they are destined for, by surprize, lest preparations should be made to receive and prevent them. I am etc.

**To THE MASSACHUSETTS LEGISLATURE**

Cambridge, March 21, 1776.

Gentn.: Er'e now, I was in hopes of congratulating you on the departure of the Ministerial Troops, not only from your Capital, but Country. That they still remain in the Harbour, after having been five days embarked, affords matter for speculation, and, collected as their force is now, of apprehension. This Circumstance, the Security of Boston by a work on Fort Hill & demolition of the Lines on the Neck, and preservation of the Stores, for Continental use, belonging to the King, by a proper search after them, rendered

it indispensably necessary for me to throw some Troops into the Town immediately (It coming within the line of my duty); but notwithstanding all the precaution, which I have endeavoured to use, to restrain and limit the Intercourse between the Town and Army and Country for a few days, I greatly fear that the Small Pox will be communicated to both.

So soon as the fleet sets Sail, my attention must be turned to another Quarter, and most of the Continental Regiments now here march'd off. It may be necessary therefore, for you, Gentn., to consider the state of your Harbour, and think of such works as shall be found necessary for the defence of it, and the Town, in case another Armed Force (which I by no means expect) should be sent hither. I shall leave three or four Regiments, as circumstances may require, for security of the Stores, and throwing up such works as shall be deemed necessary for the purposes above mentioned; and shall direct the Officer Commanding them, to receive such Instructions, in respect to the latter, as you may think proper to give.

It has been suggested to me, that, in the Town of Boston &c., there is a good deal of property belonging to Refugees and such other Inimical persons, as from the first of the present dispute, have manifested the most unfriendly disposition to the American Cause; and, that part of this Property is in such kind of effects, as can be easily transported, concealed, or changed. I submit to you, therefore, Gentlemen, the expediency of having an Enquiry made into this Matter, before it is too late for

redress, leaving the decision thereupon (after the Quantum, or Value, is ascertained, and held in state of durance) to the consideration of a future day. I have ordered that no violence be offered by

the Soldiery, either to the Persons, or property of those people; wishing that the matter may be taken into consideration by your Honorable body, and in such a way as you shall judge most advisable.<sup>54</sup>

The inclosed came to me a few days ago, and I beg leave to recommend the purport of it to the consideration of the Court. I shall take the Liberty to add, as my opinion, that the Congress expect nothing else, than that the Field Officers of the Massachusetts Regiments, should receive the same pay as those of the other Colonies have done; and that they expected, at the time the pay was fixed, that £15 to a Colonel, £12 to Lieut. Colonel and £10 to a Major, was the actual establishment of this Government. I could wish, therefore, they were allowed it, to remove the Jealousies and uneasiness which have arisen. I am etc.

54. The number of refugees who left Boston with the British Army was more than 1,000. The following statement is taken from the official return made to the government and now deposited in the public offices in London: “Members of the council, commissioners, customhouse officers, and other persons who had been in some official station, 182; clergy, 18; persons from the country, 105; merchants and other inhabitants of Boston, 213; farmers, traders, and mechanics, 382; total, 924.” All these returned their names on their arrival in Halifax. About 200 others did not return their names.

General Howe wrote from Halifax to Lord George Germain (April 25): “Many of the principal inhabitants of Boston under the protection of the army, having no means of subsistence here, apply to me to find them a passage to Europe, which they cannot otherwise get than at a most exorbitant rate. They have my assurance, that the first transport that can be spared shall be given up for this purpose. I am sorry to inform your Lordship, that there is an absolute necessity of issuing provisions to the whole of them, about eleven hundred, from the King's stores, without any prospect of stopping it. It must be confessed, that many, having quitted the whole of their property and estates, some of them very considerable in value, are real objects of his Majesty's most gracious attention.” By the army returns the British force amounted to about 8,900, officers and men. They sailed in 78 ships and transports.— *Sparks*.

**To BRIGADIER GENERAL WILLIAM THOMPSON**

Head Quarters, Cambridge, March 27, 1776.

Sir: I take this earliest Opportunity to acquaint you that the Men of War and Transports with the ministerial Troops

sail'd this Afternoon from Nantasket Harbour. There is only a Man of War and two or three other arm'd Vessels now remaining there. In Consequence of this Movement I have ordered a Brigade to march To-Morrow Morning for New York, and shall follow with the Remainder of the Army as soon as I can receive certain Information of the Fleet being clear off the Coast, and that we are in no further Danger of their returning to attack us at a Disadvantage.

I shall leave a few Regiments at Boston, to protect the continental Stores, and to assist in fortifying the Town and Harbour agreeable to the Directions that may be given by the General Assembly of this Colony. I have the Honor etc.<sup>73</sup>

**To GOVERNOR NICHOLAS COOKE**

Head Quarters, Cambridge, April 1, 1776.

Sir: I have this moment received your favor of yesterday by Express, and shall take every necessary step to send you all the reinforcement I possibly can, and that without delay. General Green was to have march'd to day with five Regiments for Norwich, by way of Providence; I have ordered him to hasten his march. General Sullivan with Six Regiments, set off last

73. The same letter was sent to Lord Stirling and Governors Cooke and Trumbull.

Friday Evening for Norwich; I have sent an Express after him, Ordering him to file off his Brigade for Providence. If the alarm should prove false, I must request the favor of you to send an Express to meet General Sullivan and order him to continue his route.



I am unacquainted with the Situation of Rhode Island and cannot tell how far it may be supported, but should think it advisable immediately to take the Stock from that and the neighbouring Islands, to prevent the Enemy from getting a supply of fresh provisions, which perhaps is their object. I make no doubt, you will take every necessary precaution to stop their progress, and you may depend upon being supported, as far as is in my power.

If it should be certain, that the Ministerial Army intend to effect a landing upon Rhode Island, I shall soon be with you; In the mean time I beg you will send me constant and particular Accounts of all occurrences, that you may think worth communicating. I am Sir etc.

P.S. upon second Consideration, I must request you at all events to send an Express immediately to Genl. Sullivan, whether the Alarm should prove true or false. (Also wrote him to send Teams or Waggons.)<sup>94</sup>

94. The alarm, entirely false, was due to foggy weather and the imagination of three soldiers.

## **To THE COMMITTEE OF SAFETY OF NEW YORK**

Head Quarters, April 17, 1776.

Gentn: There is nothing that could add more to my happiness, than to go hand in hand with the Civil Authority of this, or any other, Government, to which it may be my lot to be ordered; and, if in the prosecution of such measures, as shall appear to me, to have a manifest tendency, to promote the Interest of the great American Cause, I shall encounter the local convenience of individuals or even of a whole Colony; I beg it may be believed, that I shall do it with reluctance and pain; but, in the present important contest, the least of two Evils must be preferred.

That a continuance of the intercourse, which has hitherto subsisted between the Inhabitants of this Colony and the Enemy, on board the Ships of War, is injurious to the Common Cause, requires no extraordinary abilities to prove. A moment's reflection, not only evinces this truth, but points out the glaring absurdity of such procedure. We are to consider ourselves either in a state of peace or

War, with Great Britain. If the former, why are our Ports shut up, our Trade destroyed, our property seized, our Towns burnt, and our worthy and Valuable Citizens led into captivity and suffering the most cruel hardships? If the latter, my imagination is not fertile enough, to suggest a reason in support of the intercourse.

In the weak and defenceless state, in which this

City was some time ago, political prudence might justify the correspondence that subsisted between the Country and the Enemy's Ships of War, but as the largest part of the Continental Troops is now here; as many strong Works are erected and erecting for the defence of the City and harbour, those Motives no longer exist, but are absorbed in others of a more important nature. To tell you, Gentlemen, that the advantages of an intercourse of this kind, are altogether on the side of the Enemy, whilst we derive not the smallest benefit from it, would be telling what must be obvious to every one. It is, indeed, so glaring, that even the Enemy themselves must despise us for suffering it to be continued; for, besides their obtaining supplies of every kind, by which they are enabled to continue in your harbours, it also opens a regular Channel of intelligence; by which they are, from time to time, made acquainted with the number and extent of our Works, our Strength, and all our movements; by which they are enabled to regulate their own Plans, to our great disadvantage and Injury.—for the truth of this, I could produce Instances; but as it may be the subject of future discussion, I shall decline it at present. It would, Gentlemen, be taking up too much of your time, to use further arguments in proof of the necessity of putting an immediate and Total stop to all future Correspondence with the Enemy.—It is my incumbent duty to effect this, convinced as I am of the disadvantages resulting from it; and it cannot be thought strange or hard, that, under such Conviction, I should be anxious to remove an evil

which may contribute, not a little, to the ruin of the great Cause we are engaged in, and may, in its effects, prove highly detrimental to this Colony in particular.

In effecting the Salutary purposes above mentioned, I could wish for the Concurrence and support of your honorable Body; It will certainly add great weight to the Measures adopted, when the Civil

authority Co-operates with the Military to carry them into execution.—It will also redound much to the honor of the Government, and of your Committee in particular; for the world is apt to judge from appearances; and while such correspondence exists, the reputation of the whole Colony will suffer in the Eyes of their American Brethren.<sup>20</sup>

It is, therefore, Gentlemen, that I have taken the liberty to address you on this important Subject, relying on your Zeal and attachment to the Cause of American Liberty, for your assistance in putting a Stop to this Evil, and that you will cooperate with me, in such measures as shall be effectual, either to prevent any future correspondence with the Enemy, or in bringing to condign punishment, such Persons as may be hardy and wicked enough to carry it on, otherwise than by a prescribed mode, if any case can possibly arise to require it. I have the honor to be, with the utmost respect, Gentn., etc.

20. The committee resolved (April 19) that all persons be prohibited from holding any intercourse with the British ships under penalty of being considered enemies to the liberties o~ America and subject to treatment as such.

Tryon had prevailed upon the New York Congress (August. 1775) to furnish supplies to the British ships in the harbor, a not difficult task, as the element of profit was a major one in the matter, and this practice was continued until Washington arrived in the city after the evacuation of Boston.

## **To GOVERNOR JONATHAN TRUMBULL**

New York, April 20, 1776.

Sir: By the returns just delivered me of the state of our Ammunition, I find we are greatly deficient in the Article of Ball; and as I understand a large quantity of lead has been manufactured at Middletown, in your Government, I must beg the favor of you to forward as much as you can spare to me, as soon as possible. I am, etc.

P.S. As the quantity of powder here is much smaller than I expected, and the demand from Canada greater, I should be obliged to you if you would inform me how that has been disposed of which was said to be imported lately into your Government on Continental account.<sup>28</sup>

## **To THE COMMITTEE OF SAFETY OF NEW YORK**

April 20, 1776.

Gentn.: I thank you for the polite and ready attention you paid to my requisition of the 17th Inst., when the Civil and Military Powers Co-operate, and afford mutual Aid to each other, there can be little doubt of things going well. I have now to request the favor of your information, in what manner and in what time, a Body of 2000 or 2500 Militia, might be collected from this Colony for actual service, upon a sudden Emergency.

Although we may not, and I trust in God shall not have occasion for their Aid; common prudence does nevertheless dictate the expediency of a preconcerted Plan for calling them in, that in case of necessity they may be drawn together in proper Corps, without tumult or disorder, and at the same time

28. The text is from the Toner Transcripts in the Library of Congress.

with the utmost expedition. This will not be the case, if men are not regularly embodied and notified that they are to step forth at a moment's warning.

The Idea that strikes me, as the properest to be pursued at present, is, to establish out of the Continental Forces good look outs on the Heights and Head Lands at the Entrance of the Harbour, who, upon the appearance of a Fleet, shall make signals, as being answered from Place to Place, shall convey the earliest intelligence to Head Quarters, of the strength and approach of the Enemy. These Signals for greater certainty, to be followed by expresses, and then in case any thing formidable should appear, for the Committee of Safety, if sitting; if not, those to whom the power shall be delegated, upon application from the Commanding officer of the Continental

Forces, to order in two or more Battalions, as the exigency of the case may require, or for greater dispatch such Militia or part of them as shall be allotted to this Service by the Committee, might be assembled, if in the Town or Vicinity, by Signals to be agreed on.

A mode of proceeding of a similar kind, concerted with Jersey would bring in a reinforcement speedily and without those irregularities and unnecessary Expences, which but too frequently attend the movement of Militia.

Thus Gentlemen, I have express'd my sentiments to you upon the occasion. Your prudence will suggest to you the necessity of adopting these or other methods of a like nature

and your wisdom will point out the most effectual and expeditious manner of carrying them into Execution. I therefore submit them to your consideration, and am with great respect etc.

**To THE LEGISLATURE OR COMMITTEE OF SAFETY OF NEW JERSEY<sup>46</sup>**

New York, April 24, 1776.

Sir: The readiness shewn by the Committee of Safety for the Province of New Jersey, to succour this Place with their Militia on a late occasion, when they were at my request called upon by Brigadier General, The Earl of Stirling, and the alacrity with which I am informed the Militia then stepped forward in defence of their Country, are sufficient proofs of the Important Service the Province of New Jersey, is capable of rendering in support of the great Cause of American Liberty; especially, if the Militia of that Province be put under such regulations, as will enable them to give their aid at the very time it may be wanted and without the least delay possible. What renders such a regulation the more necessary is, that in the present Situation of Affairs, it is more than probable that the approach of the Enemy will be sudden and without our having long notice of their being on the Coast; late Experience has taught us, that under the present

46. The letter was addressed to Samuel Tucker as "President of the Congress of New Jersey or the Chairman of the Committee of Safety of that Province."

Regulation, it will take at least a fortnight (after the necessity of the requisition is seen) to Assemble and embody, any considerable Detachment of the Militia, whereof it seems absolutely necessary that there be a resolution of your Congress or Committee of Safety, for allotting a particular number of your Militia to March on the first Notice of the approach of the Enemy; the Detachment from each Regiment should be fixed upon, who should March to certain places of rendezvous, on the first Alarm by regulated signals. A Regulation of Signals was lately made by Lord Stirling, for the Highlands of Neversinks and Staten Island, a Copy of which, with some Alterations I now send you, and which I think are very proper for the purpose; the two last of which should be repeated at a number of Eminences in your province. And if on the Signal of the appearance of a large Fleet, the Detachments of your Militia were ordered to Rendezvous at Brunswick, Amboy, Woodbridge, Raway, Elizabeth Town, Newark and Bergen; they might be ready in a day or two, to march to such a Place, either in your Province or in this, as would be found to stand most in need of their Assistance; And in order to avoid the Inconveniencies which may arise from the Absence of your provincial Generals, from that part of the Country where the Troops may Assemble, it will be necessary, that the Colonels and Commanding Officers of every Corps or Detachment be directed, strictly to obey, the Orders they may receive from the Continental General, to whom that Department may be allotted,

with Respect I am etc.

## **To THE COMMITTEE OF SAFETY OF NEW YORK**

New York, April 24, 1776.

Gentn: It being necessary, that I should know the number of Troops to compose the Army here, I must request the favor of your Honble. body, to inform me, how many Regiments are raising in this Province for the Continental Service, by order of Congress, and what their state is, as to Men and Arms. From the Accounts I have had, I have reason to fear there is a great deficiency in the latter; which at a Crisis, when nothing else seems left to decide the Contest we are engaged in, is truly Alarming and calls aloud on every power for their utmost exertions to procure them. The pleasing

and ready assurances I have received from you, to co-operate with me, in every measure advancive of the Common Cause, leave me no room to doubt, but proper steps will be pursued for obtaining them, and lead me to ask, what expectations and Source you have for getting a Supply.

If there have been any officers commission'd by you, I shall be obliged by having a list of their appointments.

I have been informed that there is a Number of

Arms at Kingston, that were taken from the Tories in Dutchess County; If so, are they not at your disposal and can they be had? I am &c.

**To GOVERNOR JONATHAN TRUMBULL**

New York, April 26, 1776.

Sir: When you did me the honor of a Visit at Norwich, on my way to this Place, I communicated to you the recommendation I had received from Congress, for sending four Battalions from hence, to reinforce the Troops in Canada. I now beg leave to inform you, that, in compliance therewith, on Saturday and Sunday last, I detached four Regiments thence, under the Command of Brigadier Genl. Thompson; and, by an express received last night, am Ordered by Congress, in addition to those already gone, to send Six more immediately.<sup>62</sup> Our Regiments being incomplete and much wanting in numbers, I need not add, that the Army here felt a sensible diminution from this detachment; and, when the second is gone, will be weak indeed, considering the Importance of this place, the many extensive posts which must be guarded for its defence, and, added to this, almost the whole of our Valuable Ordinance, Stores, and Magazines will be deposited here. For these reasons, It appears to me expedient, that some mode should be adopted, without loss of time

62. Washington wrote to Col. William Irvine, of the Sixth Pennsylvania Regiment: "Immediately upon receipt of this Letter you are desired to march the Remainder of your Battalion directly to this

City, in order to embark for Albany on your Rout to Canada.” Irvine was to inform his men that Congress had augmented their pay to \$6# a month.

by this, your, and the Jersey, Government, for throwing in immediate succours, upon the appearance of the Enemy or any case of emergency. I have wrote to the Congress of New Jersey upon the subject, praying them to form such regulations respecting their Militia, (they being the only resource we have), that Assistance may be had on the earliest Notice of an approach by the Enemy, for preventing the fatal and alarming consequences, which might result from the common, tedious and slow method generally used for obtaining their Aid; and would take the liberty of mentioning, that, if the same should be done by you and your Honble. Council, respecting your Militia, or such part of them, as are most contiguous to this Place, that the most salutary ends might be derived there from. The benefits flowing from a timely Succour being too obvious for repetition; I shall propose, with all possible deference, for your consideration, whether it will not be advisable to have some select Corps of Men appointed, under proper Officers, in the Western Parts of your Government, to repair to this place, on the earliest notice from the General or Officer Commanding here, of the appearance of an Enemy. If it should be thought necessary, upon an emergency, in the first instance to resort to you, and for all the ordinary forms to be gone thro', before any succours can be ordered in, It is to be feared that the relief would be too late to answer any good purposes. This, however, I shall submit to you, in full confidence of your most ready assistance on every occasion, and that such measures, as appear to you most likely to advance the public good, in this and every instance will be most chearfully adopted. I am, etc.

## **To THE COMMITTEE OF SAFETY OF NEW YORK**

New York, April 27, 1776.

Gentn.: In answer to your favor of the 25th. delivered to me yesterday, I shall beg leave to inform you, that it was my design to have included the Militia of this City, in the 2000 or 2500 Men, which I thought might be wanted upon an emergency; but whether common prudence may not dictate the



expediency, of extending your views to a greater number, in case of necessity is submitted to the wisdom of your board.

The Signals which I intended should convey the first notice of the approach of an Enemy's Fleet, you will find in the inclosed paper; but if you will please to appoint a Committee of your body, I will desire the Brigadiers, Sullivan, Greene and Lord Stirling, to meet them and adopt a better, if a better can be thought of. New Jersey is already advertized of these Signals.<sup>63</sup>

If the four Battallions which were directed to be raised under the Command of the Colonels McDougall, Clinton, Ritzema and Wynkoop, are placed under the immediate care of the Committee of Safety, for this Colony by Congress; I should be glad to know, how far it is conceived that my power over them extend

63. The alarm posts for the New Jersey Militia, which were to assemble on signal fires on the mountains, are noted in No. 36, vol. 3, folio 117, of the *Continental Army Returns*, at one time a part of the *Washington Papers*, but now in the custody of the Adjutant General's Office, War Department, Washington, D. C. The signal points are given on folios 119–123. The alarm posts and signals settled April 14 are given on folio 125.

The signals were: “On the appearance of the Fleet, or their Boats moving towards Amboy, two flags, one above the other to be hoisted on the middle flag Staff, on the heights of Staten Island. On the appearance of the Fleet moving towards New York three flags, one above the other are to be hoisted on the same flag Staff. For the night two large heaps of Brush for the first; three large heaps of Brush for the second to be set on fire in such direction as to shew distinctly and separately.”

The alarm post changes made May 18 are found on folio 124.

Generals Greene, Sullivan, and Stirling recommended the same flag and fire signals on the highlands of the Navesink, which were to be repeated from the Staten Island station. They

recommended “large Ensigns with broad stripes of red and white” and that the country militia turn out on the signals.

or whether I have any at all. Sure I am that they cannot be subjected to the direction of both, and I shall have no small reluctance in assuming an authority I am not vested with powers to execute; nor will my solicitude (further than as a well wisher to the Cause), on account of Arms for, and returns of these Regiments continue, if they are not considered, as within the line of my Command; It becomes therefore my Indispensable duty to be ascertained of this Matter, and to know whether these Regiments cannot be ordered out of the Colony; for Instance to New Jersey if necessity should require it.

It would give me singular pleasure to advance you the Sum asked for, but the low state of our Cash and heavy demands upon the pay Master, renders it altogether impracticable at this time. The Quarter Master and Commissary are both wanting Money and cannot be supplied, nor can Genl. Ward get what he has sent for, to pay the five Regiments to the Eastward, till a fresh supply arrives, of which Congress is informed. Genl. Heath since my arrival here, has obtained a Warrant upon the pay Master for Money to replace the Sum which your Committee kindly lent him; and to the best of my recollection, Genl. Thompson told me, that he also meant to do the same. these Matters shall be enquired into. With great respect I remain Gentn. etc.

**To GOVERNOR NICHOLAS COOKE**

New York, April 28, 1776.

Sir: I received your favor of the 23d Inst. The reason why I did not hitherto represent the state of your Colony to Congress was in expectation of your forwarding unto me a Sketch of it in writing; I shall take the first opportunity of doing it and if my Recommendation thereof has any weight with that August Body, it will give me much pleasure to render Service to your Colony. I am very glad that Colo Knox has taken a View of Newport and hope the directions he has left, will be attended with all the good consequences you mention. We have no Engineer that can possibly be spared from hence, indeed we are very deficient in that Department, and the State of this Place is such that

had we many more than we have, there would be full employment from them. Colo Babcock's<sup>65</sup> misfortune is truly pitiable. the incontestable Proofs which he has given at Cambridge and since, of a Distempered Mind, must to every one acquainted with him, shew how unfit he must be to Command the forces of your Colony. I am with very great regard, Sir, etc.

P.S. the only Engineer we had to spare is sent off to Canada.

**To THE COMMITTEE OF SAFETY OF NEW YORK**

New York, April 29, 1776.

Gentn.:

65. Col. Henry Babcock, of Rhode Island.

Sometime before I left Cambridge, I received an Order of Congress to apply to the Assemblies or Conventions of the four New England Colonies, for Arms to supply the deficiency of their respective Regiments and if not to be had to discharge the men that wanted them. When I came to this Place and was informed by Colo Ritzema, of the want of this Article for his Regiment and the other Troops of this Colony, it became my duty to make this want known to Congress; at the same time giving it as my opinion, that as we found it no easy matter to recruit men, with the Expedition they were required, it might be disserviceable to discharge any of the York Troops, as some lucky hit may throw Arms into our hands. In consequence of which, I received by Post the inclosed Resolution,<sup>69</sup> which without delay, I lay before your Honorable Body. And am Gentn. etc.

**To THE COMMITTEE OF SAFETY OF NEW YORK**

New York, April 30, 1776.

Gentn: I perceive by the tenor of your favor of yesterday, that my Letter of the 25th. has given Umbrage, which I am sorry for, as it was not most distantly in my Idea to give any.

Three things led me to suspect that the New York

69. Resolve of April 26 authorizing Washington to apply to the Committee of Safety or Legislature of New York for arms for the New York troops.

Battalions were not upon the same Establishment of the other Continental Troops; Current report, an implied exception in the order for detaching six more Battalions to Canada, and that part of your Letter signifying that four of these Battalions were to be raised under your immediate direction; which intimation coming in corroboration of the two first reasons (for I never had any information of this matter from Congress); led me to believe that you intended it as a genteel hint that I was not to consider them in the same light I did the others; it was not to be wondered at therefore that I should wish to know the extent of my authority over them that my Conduct might be regulated thereby; or, that I should be so solicitous in arming Regiments, raised for local purposes, as these for the General Service, when the latter are also greatly deficient in this essential point. These were the Ideas that filled my mind at the time of writing; If the extreme hurry occasioned by a variety of business which is continually pressing upon me, clouded the meaning I wished to convey, I can only add, that It never was, and I hope never will be, my intention to give unprovoked offence; of this your Committee may be once for all, assured, that it is my earnest wish to co-operate with them, in every measure which can conduce to the General good, and that if I should, at any time, differ from them in the means, I shall feel my share of the concern, being with respect, Gent. etc.

**To GOVERNOR JONATHAN TRUMBULL**

New York, May 2, 1776.

Sir: I received your favor of the 22d Ulto. and am sorry to Inform you, that it is not in my power at this time to refund to your Colony the Powder lent the Continent; our Magazine here being very low and the pressing demands from Canada obliging me immediately to forward Sixty Barrels thither. Should any Inconveniency result to the Colony from not having it, It will give me much uneasiness; you may rest assured, that as soon as I possibly can, I will make a return of it.

The Commissary General has not presented the Account yet; when he does, it shall be immediately paid. I am etc.

**To THE COMMITTEE OF THE MASSACHUSETTS LEGISLATURE<sup>37</sup>**

New York, May 9, 1776.

Sir: I received your favor of the 3d Inst. on Tuesday Evening, covering that of the Committee of Salem to your Honble. Court; and judging the Intelligence interesting and Important, I immediately forwarded Copies of both to Congress by the Express for them to give such Orders and direction respecting it, as they might think proper and requisite. I am not yet favored with their Answer; as soon as it comes, I will send it you by the Express, and whatever measures they direct me to pursue,

37. Thomas Cushing was chairman of this committee.

I will attempt to put in execution with all Possible dispatch. The Account having come thro' different hands, I hope it is exaggerated; It appears inconsistent and impossible in part; certainly there is a mistake, either as to the Number of Troops or the Ships, there must be more of the latter or fewer of the former; 60 Vessels could not bring 12,000 Men, unless they are much larger than usual, besides provisions and Stores: nor should such a fleet and Armament be coming, do I think it altogether probable, that an account of their destination and Views, could be so distinctly and accurately given to the Master, who informed Capt'n. Lee; I should rather suppose, that they would wish to take us by surprize. For these reasons, and as their destination may be elsewhere, and as the Army here is greatly Weakened and reduced by Ten of the Strongest Regiments being ordered to Quebec; I could not think myself authorized to detach any reinforcement from hence, without the direction of Congress; least by dividing the Army into small parties, we should have no place secure and guarded; Assuring you at the same time, I shall be always ready and happy to give you every Assistance in my power against our common Enemies, when it can be done consistently with the public good. I am &ca.

**To GOVERNOR NICHOLAS COOKE**

New York, May 13, 1776.

Sir: I received your favor of the 6th Inst., for which and Its several Inclosures, I return you my thanks.

Agreeable to my promise, on the 30th Ulto. I wrote Congress respecting the state of your Colony, importuning their Attention to it, and that proper measures should be adopted for its relief and defence. A copy of the Letter you have inclosed for your perusal and further satisfaction.

It gives me much pleasure, to hear there is so much unanimity among you, and that the Inhabitants of Newport have come to the laudable and necessary Resolution you mentioned; If united, your exertions most probably will have the desired effect; and tho' they should not be so fully answered, as men of over sanguine dispositions hope and expect; yet they will be productive of great benefits and advantages to the Colony and at the same time promote the public good. I am &c.

**To ISAAC SEARS**

New York, May 13, 1776.

Sir: I received your favor of the 2d Inst. and am fully of opinion with you, that the Resolves of Congress, should be strictly adhered to; As the regulation of the Price of Tea, or any other Article, is quite foreign to my department, I shall leave such Matters to the Provincial Congress before whom I will this day lay your Letter, and I doubt not they will take such steps as will put a stop to the evil you are apprehensive of. I am &c.

**To THE COMMITTEE OF SUFFOLK, LONG ISLAND<sup>59</sup>**

New York, May 16, 1776.

Sir: Your favor of the 14th with an Account of the apprehending of Sundry Tories by order of your Committee and the taking of others by Capt. Harden is now before me. Your Zeal and activity upon this occasion is truly commendable, and with great pleasure I will lend any aid in my power, that shall be thought within the line of my department, to root out or secure such abominable pests of Society. But as you have neither pointed out the names or places of abode of the persons aluded to, by your Informants on long Island, I must beg the favor of a more explicit description from you; and in the mean while, will set on foot a proper enquiry into this matter of some Gentlemen here, acquainted with the Island, and concert some plan for defeating the designs which you think are in agitation. I shall add no more at present than that. I am, etc.

59. Jonathan Sturges was chairman of this committee.

#### **To THE COMMITTEE OF SAFETY OF NEW HAMPSHIRE**

New York, May 16, 1776.

Gentn: The Honorable Continental Congress having lately come to some Resolutions, respecting the Cannon and other Stores in Boston, which Interest your Colony, and the mode to be observed for paying the Militia lately called in for the defence of the lines before Boston; I do myself the honor to transmit you Copies thereof least they may not have been otherwise forwarded. and am  
Gentn:

#### **To THE MASSACHUSETTS LEGISLATURE**

New York, May 16, 1776.<sup>60</sup>

Gentn: The Honorable Continental Congress having come to sundry resolutions, respecting the Cannon and Stores in and about Boston, and the mode of paying the Militia lately called in for the defence of the Lines before it; I do myself the honor to transmit you Copies thereof, least they may not have come to hand. I would observe, that I think it will be of advantage to you, to make your arrangements out of the Cannon, originally belonging to the Colony and those presented it by

Congress, and not to count on those brought from Ticonderoga and which are left, tho' Congress are willing to lend them. For it is more than probable they may be wanted elsewhere, and if

60. On this same day, Robert Hanson Harrison, by direction of the Commander in Chief, wrote to Maj. Gen. Artemas Ward, setting Ward aright as to the regiments on Bunker Hill and Dorchester Heights. The committee of the Massachusetts Legislature apparently had influenced Ward in regard to these regiments as Washington has noted, in silver-point, upon the letter of May 3 from the committee: "Genl. Washington would remark upon above that one of the 5 Regiments left at Boston was compleat and that the other 4 contained the average of those brought away." (See Washington's letter to the committee of the Massachusetts Legislature, May 9, 1776, *ante*.)

they should; It will derange your order and lay you under the necessity of providing others and Carriages, at a time when it may be Inconvenient and when they may be most useful. I am &c.

#### **To THE NEW YORK LEGISLATURE**

New York, May 17, 1776.

Sir: As I have no doubt of the Willingness of the Militia of this City, to Join in its defence against the attempts of the Enemies of America; It is highly necessary, in order to avoid Confusion in the time of any alarm, that the Posts of the several Regiments of Militia be fixed on, in Conjunction with those of the Continental Army, and that they be allotted to the Brigades most convenient to their several Situations; and as I am now arranging that part of the Business of the Army, It will I presume be proper, that directions be given to the Commanding officers of the several Corps, to take the Stations that I shall Assign, and to obey the orders, they may in time of danger receive from me, or the Brigadier Generals of the Continental Army; the like measure will be equally necessary with regard to the Militia of King's County and part of Queen's County on Long Island, and also the Militia of Staten Island, and I am persuaded, that the mention of a Matter so obviously necessary will be sufficient to induce the Congress of this Province to give such directions as are proper on this occasion. I am &c.



## **To THE NEW YORK LEGISLATURE**

New York, May 19, 1776.

Sir: Having reason to believe from Intelligence lately received, that the Time is not far distant when the arrival of a considerable Armament may be expected, I must again repeat my Applications on the subject of Arms, and intreat your Honble. Body to use their utmost exertions, that a supply May be obtained for the Regiments of this Colony, which in General are extremely deficient, some of them almost destitute. I trust your own feelings will readily suggest, I have sufficient cause of anxiety and concern upon this occasion, and will furnish an Apology for my so often troubling you. I have tried, I have pursued every Measure my Judgment led to, without being able to procure a sufficient Quantity; nor have I any power to apply to but you, from which I can promise myself the least prospect of Success.

I would also take the Liberty of praying your endeavours to procure a Quantity of Intrenching Tools, Vizt. Spades and Shovels; as our operations go on much slower than they would, If we had more of them; which at a crisis like this, is exceedingly alarming, when the utmost labour and Industry will not more than Compleat the Necessary Works of defence, by the time the Enemy may Attempt an Invasion. The Quarter Master Assures me that he has taken every possible method in his power to get them, but without Success,

which is the reason of my requesting an exertion of your Interest. I am, etc.

## **To THE NEW YORK LEGISLATURE**

New York, May 21, 1776.

Gentn: Congress having been pleased to request my attendance at Philadelphia, to advise with them on the Situation of affairs and being about to set out immediately; I judged it proper to give Major Genl. Putnam Instructions similar to those I have the honor to inclose you; for the regulation of his

Conduct, in case you come to any determination respecting the Tories here and on Long Island and should have occasion for Military assistance, to carry it into execution. I have &ca.

**To THE NEW YORK LEGISLATURE**

New York, June 7, 1776.

Gentn.: I suppose you have received from the Congress two Resolutions, for the reinforcement of our Army in Canada; but, least you should not be apprized of them, I take the liberty to inclose you a Copy. I most earnestly request, you will exert every endeavour, to furnish the Quota expected from your

Province, as speedily as possible. General Schuyler is extremely importunate for a Supply of Men, and it is altogether out of my power to afford them from the Troops here; as they by no means exceed the Number requisite for the defence of this Place. I have the honor to be, etc.

**To GOVERNOR JONATHAN TRUMBULL**

New York, June 10, 1776.

Sir: Before this, I expect you have received the Resolve of Congress for augmenting our Army here, and in Canada, with their requisition for the Quota of Men to be furnished by your Colony; I must beg leave to add, that, from intelligence I have just received, and a Variety of Circumstances combining to Confirm it, Genl. Howe, with the Fleet from Halifax, or some other Armament, is hourly expected at the Hook, with designs, doubtless, to make an Impression here, and possess themselves of this Colony, of the last Importance to us, in the present controversy. Our Works are extensive and many, and the Troops here but few for their defence; being greatly reduced by the Regiments detached on the Canada Expedition. In this critical conjuncture of Affairs, the Experience I have had, of your Zeal and readiness to assist the Common cause, induces me to request the most

speedy and early Succour, that can be obtained from your Colony, and that the Militia be forwarded one Battalion after another, as fast as they can possibly be raised; without waiting to make up the whole complement to be furnished for this Place, before any of them March. I would advise, that they come properly provided with Field and other officers, and that the person appointed by the Colony to Command the whole, be here a day or two before them, to receive his Orders, and be in readiness to take the Command on their Arrival. It will be proper too, that Notice be sent a day or two before their Coming, that provision may be made for furnishing and disposing of them in proper places.

I have wrote a Similar Letter to the Jersey Convention, praying Aid from them. I am, &c.

## **To THE NEW YORK LEGISLATURE**

Head Quarters, New York, June 13, 1776.

Sirs: I am informed that a Number of persons on Long Island (by character not the most friendly to the cause of the United Colonies) have in their hands considerable Quantities of Pork and other provisions; which they refuse to part with for Continental Bills they may have other reasons for their Conduct, still more detrimental and therefore I must beg the Interposition of your

Congress in this Matter, so as to prevent the evils which are much to be apprehended. The Commissary General will purchase all their Provisions, at good prices and give them Continental Bills in pay; Gold and Silver he has none. The provisions are wanted for the Army, and those who are wellwishers to the Cause, and live in exposed Situations, will undoubtedly be glad to dispose of them; the disadvantages which may result to the Public, by leaving them in the Hands of Men of a different complexion, are too obvious to need animadversion.<sup>64</sup>

I have your report respecting the obstruction of the navigation of the Hudson's River under Consideration, and am pursuing measures to carry it into Execution, with all possible Dispatch. With great Respect, I am &c.

## To THE COMMITTEE OF SAFETY OF PENNSYLVANIA

New York, June 17, 1776.

Sir: I was this Evening honoured with yours of the 15 Inst, and It is with no small degree of pain that I am under the necessity of Informing you It is out of my power at this time to comply with the request made by your Honourable body. The many Important works carrying on for the defence of this place<sup>80</sup> against which there is the highest probability of an Attack being made in a little time, will not allow me to

64. The legislature answered (June 15) that it depended on the Commissary General to obtain the provisions desired and that it had “in contemplation some general and effectual measures for securing the live stock in certain parts of the Colony for the benefit of the Army.” Its letter is in the *Washington Papers*.

80. Congress had authorized the Committee of Safety in Philadelphia to erect a redoubt at Billingsport and throw obstructions across the Delaware at that place, for the purpose of opposing the progress of the enemy's ships up the river, and had agreed that the same should be constructed at the Continental expense. The committee had requested the Commander in Chief to send them an engineer to plan and superintend these works.— *Sparks*.

spare from hence any person who has the least skill in the business of an Engineer nor have I but one on whose Judgment I would wish to depend in laying out any work of the least consequence. Congress well know my wants in this Instance, and several of my late Letters to them, have pressed the appointment of Gentlemen qualified for this business; added to this, on account of the deficiency, I have not been able to secure or Improve Two posts in the Highlands, esteemed of the utmost Importance to prevent the Enemy from passing up the North River and getting into the Interior parts of this Colony, should our attempts to stop them here prove ineffectual. But I beg you to be assured Sir and to Inform the Committee, that as soon as It is in my power, I shall with infinite pleasure direct a person to attend them for two or three days. If the service will not admit of

a longer absence, in order to trace out such works and plans for carrying them on, as shall appear necessary and wishing you to ascribe my non-compliance, to want of ability and not of inclination to perform your request. I have the honor, etc.<sup>81</sup>

[P.H.S.]

**To THE COMMITTEE OF ESSEX COUNTY, NEW JERSEY<sup>82</sup>**

New York, June 17, 1776.

Gentn.: The absolute necessity of preventing all

81. In the writing of Robert Hanson Harrison.

82. Dr. William Burner was chairman of the committee.

correspondence between the Inhabitants of this Country and our Enemies, obliges me to every degree of Intelligence, that lead to the Channel of such Intercourse. Doctor William Burner of New Ark can inform you of certain Insinuations and charges against part of the Army under my Command, as if they were liable to bribery and Corruption, in permitting persons to go from Staten Island to the Men of War at or near Sandy Hook, and as the Person from whom he has received his Intelligence, resides at New Ark, within the district of your Committee, I must request it, as a Matter of great importance, that your Committee will as soon as possible call on David Ogden Esqr., to declare who the person was, who informed him, that he had engaged the guard of the Rifle men at Staten Island, to carry him on Board the Men of War; with all the circumstances within his knowledge; and also that you do call on the person whom he points out, to be his Informant, to declare every Circumstance within his knowledge, relative to the Matter. I am &c.

**To THE NEW YORK LEGISLATURE**

Head Quarters, New York, June 27, 1776.

Sir: The necessity of the most Vigorous and decisive Measures in our present Circumstances, will I doubt not justify to your Honorable Body, the removal of the Stock of

Cattle and Horses, from those parts of the Coast most exposed to the Enemy; after a long and fatiguing Voyage they will need Refreshment of this Nature and there is no doubt they will have them, if Possible on any Terms. Common prudence therefore and a regard to our own safety, strongly evince the necessity of depriving them of such supplies, as will enable them to act with more Vigour and Spirit against us; Tho' painful and disagreeable, it seems to be a measure which the great Law of self preservation now requires. Inclosed I transmit the unanimous Resolution of a Council of Genl Officers,<sup>29</sup> advising such removal without delay, in which it is proposed to pay a suitable regard to the necessities of the People. I flatter myself that in a Matter of such Importance and difficulty, The Honble. Body over which you preside, will approve of the proposal and carry it into execution, or co-operate with me in the most effectual Steps for the purpose. I have the Honor to be etc.

29. This council was held on June 27 and was attended by Brig. Gens. William Heath, Joseph Spencer, Nathanael Greene, and Lord Stirling. The original proceedings are in the *Washington Papers*.

**To THE MASSACHUSETTS LEGISLATURE OR, IN THEIR RECESS, THE  
COMMITTEE OF SAFETY**

New York, June 28, 1776.

Gentn.: By certain Advices just received I am informed that a Fleet consisting of 130 Sail left Halifax the 9th Instant, bound for this place and am well assured, that General Howe is already arrived at the Hook in the Greyhound; I do therefore, in the most pressing manner request, that you would not lose a moment's time in sending forward the Militia

of your Province, as the Enemy will undoubtedly attack us in our Weak state, as soon as a Sufficient force arrives, to enable them to attempt it, with the least probability of Success; and altho' I cannot expect, by reason of the distance, that your Quota of Troops will reach this so seasonably, as to afford assistance upon the first attack of the Enemy, yet I promise myself it will not occasion any delay in their March. Relying on your using all possible dispatch in this Business, I remain, etc.<sup>30</sup>

30. Practically the same letter was sent to Gov. Jonathan Trumbull and to Brig. Gen. James Wadsworth, of the Connecticut Militia, at Dunham, this same day.

### **To THE COMMITTEE OF ESSEX COUNTY, NEW JERSEY**

New York, June 30, 1776.

Sir: I received your favor by Mr. Treat, and cannot but consider the officer of Mr. Franklin's Guard extremely blameable, for his conduct; It is certainly his Indispensible duty, to conduct Mr. Franklin to the place the Convention have ordered without delay. The Circumstances you represent, his Letter to his Lady and the whole complexion of the case, afford a strong presumption; nay, much more, full evidence, that he means to escape if possible. he says in his Letter, "that, during his respite, the time between his writing and getting an Answer from Congress, something may turn up to make his removal improper, and at any rate to gain time will be of advantage."

I have wrote to the Captain of his guard upon the subject, and as Mr. Franklin has evidenced a most unfriendly disposition to our Cause—As the Colony Convention have ordered him to Connecticut, for refusing to Comply with such terms, as they deemed necessary and proper for him to enter into, to procure his Liberty<sup>53</sup> —As he does not propose to sign the Parole which they formed, but has proposed several alterations; I am of opinion, your Committee should interfere in the matter and give immediate orders to the officer of the Guard, to proceed with him, in execution of the duty

wherewith he is charged; and, further, that, if you apprehend there is the least danger of his being rescued, or of the Guard,

53. Gov. William Franklin, royalist Governor of New Jersey was the natural son of Dr. Benjamin Franklin. He was a strong loyalist and had been arrested as a public enemy; he was confined in Connecticut. After his exchange he became the president of the Associated Loyalists.

appointed to escort him, being remiss in their duty, that your Committee should appoint a strong escort for the purpose, and direct them to assist in performing the Views of the Convention, and conduct him securely to the place fixed upon to receive him.

I have inclosed the Letter for the officer of the guard, which having read, you will seal and transmit him. I am &c.

**To GOVERNOR JONATHAN TRUMBULL**

New York, July 7, 1776.

Sir: I have been honored with your favors of the 3d. and 4th. Inst. and return you my sincere thanks for your kind intention to

afford me every assistance in your power, at this truly Critical and alarming period. The situation of our affairs calls aloud for the most vigorous exertions and nothing less will be sufficient to avert the impending blow. From four Prisoners taken the other day, we are Informed Genl. Howe has Already about Ten thousand Men, being joined by the Regiments from the West Indies and some of the Highland Troops in his passage hither; that he is in daily expectation of the arrival of Admiral Howe and that nothing would be attempted till he came, having some from Halifax, in Consequence of Advices received a few days before, from England; that the Admiral was ready to Sail with a Fleet of one hundred and fifty Ships, with a large reinforcement to join him here, these Armies when United, you will readily conceive will be extremely Formidable and such as will require a large and Numerous one on our part, to oppose them. But yet I have been under the necessity of



informing Colo. Silliman, that it will be impossible to Subsist the Horse of the three Regiments Ordered, and if it could be done, the Expenditure would be enormous and what I do not apprehend I have authority to Assent to. At the same time, knowing the Important Advantages that may result from their Aid, I have intreated his exertions to prevail on the Men to come themselves. I hope, on the one hand they will see the propriety of my objecting to their Horses and on the other the Necessity there is of coming themselves. My Anxiety leads me to request

a Continuance of your good offices in forwarding the Battalions Ordered with all possible dispatch. The Interest of America is now in the Balance, and it behoves all Attached to her Sacred Cause and the rights of Humanity, to hold forth their Utmost and most speedy Aid. I am Convinced nothing will be wanting in your power to Effect.

The situation of the Northern Army is certainly distressing, but no relief can be afforded by me; this I am persuaded you will readily agree to. I should Suppose, If proper precautions are taken, the Small pox may be prevented from spreading. this was done at Cambridge, and I trust will be contrived by Generals Schuyler and Gates, who are well apprized of the fatal Consequences that may attend Its infecting the whole Army; but a small part of the Forces here have had it and were it not the case, neither policy or prudence would allow me to send any more from hence, that have seen the least of Service.—too many have been already detached; to part with more, would be to put all to the Hazard.

The retreat of the Army from Canada, I doubt not will occasion a General Alarm to the Frontier Inhabitants, and our Enemies, without question, will use every means they can suggest, to Excite the Savages against them. But I would feign hope, their Incursions will be prevented and repelled without much difficulty. The first opportunity I have, I will transmit a Copy of your Letter to Congress upon this Subject and request

their attention to it. I am, etc.

## **To THE MASSACHUSETTS LEGISLATURE OR COMMITTEE OF SAFETY OF THE STATE**

New York, July 9, 1776.

Gentn.: You will perceive by the inclosed Declaration, which I have the honor to transmit you, that Congress of late have been employed in deliberating on Matters of the utmost Importance. Impelled by Necessity and a Repetition of Injuries unsufferable without the most distant prospect of relief, they have asserted the Claims of the American Colonies to the rights of Humanity and declared them, Free and Independent States.<sup>97</sup>

97. Whether Washington inclosed one of the John Dunlap broadsides of the Declaration of Independence or a manuscript copy is not known to the editor.

Judging from a variety of circumstances, that the British Arms are meant to be directed this Campaign against the State of New York, to effect Its reduction; they have empowered to order the three fullest Regiments of their Troops in the Massachusetts Bay, to reinforce our Northern Army, as you will see, by a Copy of their Resolve which I have inclosed; I have accordingly requested General Ward to detach them with all possible expedition, to join that Army and prevent the fatal and alarming consequences that would result from the Enemies passing the Lakes and making an impression on our Frontiers. I am almost morally certain, that no attempts will be made on the Massachusetts Bay; and if there should, they must prove abortive and ineffectual. The Militia, Independent of other Troops, being more than competent to all the purposes of defensive War; However should it be deemed expedient by your Honble Body, Congress have Authorised you to embody and take into pay a Number of Militia, equal to the Regiments to be detached. I have etc.

## **To GOVERNOR NICHOLAS COOKE**

Head Quarters, New York, July 9, 1776.

Sir: By a Letter received by Congress from Mr. Thomas Greene, Copy of which they did me the Honor to inclose, I have

the Pleasure to hear of the Arrival of Capt. Chase with a Valuable Cargo at Providence. and As that Honble. Body have been pleased to order the Flints at Rhode Island, belonging to the Continent, to be sent me here, (as pr. their Resolution Inclosed) I would therefore request, you would cause it to be done without the smallest delay, together with the small Arms which came in the Vessel. As to the Duck, if it is of the kind suitable for Tents, either the whole or part, I should be greatly obliged to you if you would order them made up as fast as possible, and forwarded to Norwich: but if it is Coarse and Stubborn, and of a Quality unfit for the above purpose, it will be unnecessary to give yourself any trouble about the Matter.

I am very sorry I cannot spare you a General officer, agreeable to your desire, to take the Command of the Forces belonging to Rhode Island, but in the present Critical juncture, it is utterly out of my power, to comply with your request. General Mercer is the only Officer who has no Brigade assign'd him, and at a time when we are in constant expectation of some important movement of the Enemy; his presence is so necessary here, that it cannot possibly be dispensed with.—The best expedient that can be fallen upon, I presume, would be to give the Command to the Senior Officer of the Troops till a Brigadier is appointed. I have only to add, that I am with much respect.

## **To GOVERNOR JONATHAN TRUMBULL**

Head Quarters, New York, July 9, 1776.

Sir: Your's, of the Inst., is safely come to hand. Col. Seymour arrived yesterday with a few of his Men, when I sent for and acquainted him, it would be impossible for me to have his Horses remain here; Forrage is not to be procured; and, if it could, it would only be a great expence, without a single Advantage arising from it. The Men are absolutely necessary, till the arrival of the New Levies;—Colo. Seymour is to propose the Matter to them this Morning and return me an Answer. We have intelligence, that may be relied on, of Lord Howe's being on his passage for this place

with a large Fleet and about 15,000 Men, and is hourly expected. By several deserters from Staten Island and the Ships of War, whose Accounts all agree;—that Genl. Howe proposes no Attempt on us, till the Arrival of this reinforcement, when, it is said, with a part of his Army, he will make a descent on the Jersey side, while the Fleet and the other part of the Army in Conjunction, attack this City. To oppose this force, in which the Ministry put so much Confidence, I think it necessary to exert our every Nerve, and, by defeating their Views this Campaign, be enabled to meet them with double advantage the next; should they think proper to pursue their unwarrantable measures, I hope the good people of your Colony, or State, will be ready, on all occasions, to fly to our assistance, if needed; I have a Confidence in and doubt not they will be ready and willing.

To prevent the Enemy from obtaining fresh provisions, is a Matter highly necessary to be attended to. I am informed that there are great Quantities on the Islands in the Neighbourhood of New-London, Vizt: Fishers, Block, Plumb and Elizabeth Islands and Martha's Vineyard; these are accessible to Ships of force, and no doubt, they will soon be on a plundering Voyage. I could wish your Attention to this Matter, that the Stock might all be removed quite out of reach of the Enemy. The East end of Long Island, I am told, is not less exposed than the others; I think effectual steps will be taken in regard to that, as I have had a Conference with the Convention of this Province, and an order has gone out for driving all the Stock from the Sea Coasts.

In conference, of a full Board of General Officers yesterday, it was recommended, I should apply to your Honor for the three Row Gallies, being now at New London, or in the River; together with as many heavy Cannon as you can possibly spare, they are what will be much wanted here; and, if you find it consistent, would beg you to forward them on as soon as possible.<sup>98</sup>

I would not have it understood, from what I said above in regard to the *Horse*, that I think it a wrong step their coming forward. I think it a Step, which was highly advisable; and am much pleased to see, with what chearfulness and dispatch your Orders were executed. This Body of Horse, provided they are well Arm'd with good Muskets, must always be of greater Service, on sudden emergencies; to throw

98. The sinking of hulks at Tappan Bay to block the passage up the river; using the Connecticut volunteer troop of horse, but sending the horses back to Connecticut; and ordering three regiments from Boston to Canada were decided upon. The proceedings of this conference (July 8), in the writing of Joseph Reed, are in the *Washington Papers*.

in succours when call'd for than the Militia. I have the honor to be, etc.

**To GOVERNOR JONATHAN TRUMBULL**

New York, July 11, 1776.

Sir: I duly received your favor of the 6th. Instant; and return you my best thanks for the attention you have shewn at this Crisis, in preparing the several Regiments of Militia, which are nearest this Place, to be ready for Marching when Ordered. Some of the Troops have arrived, and I hope the rest will follow without loss of time. In my Letter of the 9th. Inst. I wrote you fully relative to the Light Horse; which have arrived, to the number of between 4 and 500; and have the happiness to acquaint you, the Officers and Men of that Corps, have manifested so firm an attachment to the Cause we are engaged in, that they have consented to remain here, till such a Body of Troops are marched from your Colony, as will be a Sufficient Reinforcement, so as to admit of their leaving this City with safety. I mention this Matter with greater pleasure, as they have the additional Merit of determining to stay, even if they are obliged to maintain their Horses at their own expence. I have also wrote you with regard to sending any Troops from hence to the Northward, to be replaced by the Militia from your Province, and have stated the injudiciousness, of adopting such a Measure. It

is indeed a great misfortune, that the smallpox is so prevalent in our Northern Army; but I conceive it would be highly impolitic at this important period, to send away Troops who have been a considerable time in the Service, and to have their places supplied by Men of much less experience, who belong to the Militia. I have only to add, that I am with much esteem, Sir etc.

P.S. I must refer you to my Letter above mentioned, for my Sentiments with respect to removing the Cattle from the different places specified. As to the Cattle on Montauk Point, I can only say,

some method must be devised, to answer the purpose of preventing the Inhabitants of East Hampton from Suffering on the one hand, and the Supply of the Enemy with any Stock on the other.

**To THE MASSACHUSETTS LEGISLATURE OR, IN ITS RECESS, THE COMMITTEE OF SAFETY**

Head Quarters, New York, July 11, 1776.

Gentn.: At a Crisis like the present, when our Enemies are prosecuting a War with unexampled severity; when they have call'd upon foreign Mercenaries and have excited Slaves and Savages to Arms against us; a regard to our own Security and happiness, calls upon us to adopt every possible expedient to avert the Blow and prevent the meditated ruin.

Impressed with this Sentiment and impelled by Necessity, the Congress have been pleased to empower me, as you will perceive by the inclosed Copy of their Resolve, which I have the Honor of transmitting you; to call to our Aid so many of the St. Johns, Nova Scotia, and Penobscott Indians, as I might judge necessary; at the same time they have desired, that I should request the Assistance of your Honble. Body, in carrying their Views into execution, and to assure you, that whatever expences you may necessarily incur in doing it, and as incident to it, they will reimburse. Esteeming this Service of such Importance; particularly, if the Enemy should attempt an Impression into the Interior parts of the Country; I must intreat your kind Offices upon this occasion, and your friendly exertions immediately to engage on the best terms you can, five or Six hundred Men of these Tribes and have them marched with all possible expedition to join the Army here.

Having professed a strong Inclination to take part with us in the present Contest, It is probable they may be engaged for less pay and on better terms than the Continental Troops; but, if they cannot, they must be allowed it; The Term of their inlistment should be for two or three Years, unless sooner discharged (the right of which should be reserved us) if they will engage for so long a time; if not, for such time as they will agree to, provided it is not too short; and it must be part of the treaty, and enjoined upon them, to bring every Man his

firelock, if it can be possibly effected. As the Services they may render will probably depend on their early and timely arrival, It is unnecessary to suggest to you, the necessity of the utmost dispatch in the Matter.

I well know the execution of the Work will be attended with some trouble and Inconvenience; but a consideration of the Benefits that may arise from employing them and your Zeal for the Common Cause, I am persuaded will surmount every Obstacle, and apologize for my requisition; especially as it comes recommended and supported by Authority of Congress. I have the Honor etc.

P.S. Since I had the honor of addressing you on the 9th Inst., I have received a Resolve from Congress, for calling the other two Continental Regiments from the Mass. Bay, to join the Army here, a Copy of which I have inclosed, and by the advice of my General Officers, have wrote General Ward, to detach them immediately; the Accounts we have all agreeing, that Lord Howe is every day expected with 150 Transports with 15,000 Men at least, in addition to those already here.

### **To THE SECRET COMMITTEE OF THE NEW YORK LEGISLATURE<sup>23</sup>**

Head Quarters, July 13, 1776.

Gentn:

23. The New York Congress had appointed a committee in May, 1776, to deal with “intestine enemies.” A standing committee of five was appointed May 27, 1776, and later increased to nine members, with enlarged powers, to function until the committee was dissolved by the Congress. In September, 1776, this committee was given a perfected organization, to which the county committees became subordinate. This organization was dissolved in February, 1777, and was succeeded by a legislative committee of three, soon after increased to five, and, in August, 1778, again enlarged to nine members, who became known as the Commissioners for Detecting and Defeating Conspiracies. As the British held New York City from 1776 to the end of the war, this committee moved from place to place in exercising its functions. The whole system in New York

is comprehensively treated in Flick's *Loyalism in New York during the American Revolution* (New York: 1901) ( *Columbia University Studies in History, etc.*, vol. 14, p. 1). At the date of this letter the personnel of the committee was: Robert Yates, John Jay, Robert R. Livingston, Christopher Tappan, and Gilbert Livingston.

A mutiplicity of engagements, and a Continual pressure of other Concerns, has prevented proceeding in the case of the Soldiers confined for seditious and treasonable practices; but as soon as time will admit, a proper attention will be paid to it: In the mean time, I beg leave to suggest the propriety of the Authority of the Province, taking some steps, with regard to those persons confined by them for the same offences. They certainly are to be deemed the principals, and Justice to the inferior Agents, while the others pass unnoticed, I observe, only excites compassion and censure. I am very sensible, it is a case full of difficulty and perplexity, and well deserving your most serious deliberations; nor do I entertain a doubt, but the result will be such, as will conduce to the Public good. I have, some time ago, mentioned to the Body, of which you are a Committee, the Necessity of falling upon some Measure to remove, from this City and its Environs, Persons of known disaffection and Enmity to the Cause of America. The safety of the Army, the Success of every Enterprize, and the Security of all, depends so much on adopting the most Speedy and effectual Steps for the purpose, that I beg leave again to repeat it; and do most earnestly intreat you to fall upon some plan for this purpose, or give me your Assistance so to do, as to remove those disquieting and discouraging apprehensions, which pervade the whole Army on this Subject. A suspicion, that there are many Ministerial Agents among us, would justly alarm Soldiers of more experience and discipline than ours; and I foresee very

dangerous Consequences, in many respects, if a Remedy to the evil is not soon and efficaciously applied.

The removal of the Tory Prisoners, confined in the Gaol of this City, is a matter to which I would Solicit your attention, in every View it appears dangerous and improper. In case of an Attack and Alarm, there can be no doubt what part they will take and none can tell what Influence they might have. You will, Gentlemen, do me the justice to believe, that nothing but the Importance



and necessity of the Case, could induce me thus to urge these matters, in which you have also an immediate and Common Interest.<sup>24</sup> The Gentlemen appointed to give passes to persons leaving the City, I am informed decline acting. Great Inconvenience will ensue to the Citizens, if this Business should be Committed to Officers of the Army, who from their ignorance of the Inhabitants, as well as other reasons are wholly improper for the management of it. I should be glad if your Committee will take this Matter also into their Consideration. I am etc.

**To BRIGADIER GENERAL GEORGE CLINTON**

Head Quarters, New York, July 12, 1776.<sup>19</sup>

Sir:

24. Sparks notes that this representation had its effect. Thirteen Tory prisoners, including the persons most obnoxious for their principles and conduct, were speedily removed by order of the convention to the jail at Litchfield in Connecticut. Two lists of loyalist prisoners confined in the city hall, New York, are in the *Washington Papers*, under the assigned date of July 1, 1776.

19. On July 12 Washington proposed to a council of war the question of a general attack on the enemy's quarters on Staten Island, but it was unanimously agreed that such a step was not advisable. "To alarm the Enemy and encourage our own Troops, who seem generally desirous something should be done," the Commander in Chief then proposed "That Major Knowlton who is stationed at Bergen and has reconnoitred the Island do confer with General Mercer thereon, and if they upon Consideration shall deem such a Surprise practicable and that the Retreat of the Men can be secured, the General be advised to prosecute it. That this Enterprise be accompanied with a Cannonade upon the fleet from Bergen Point if the Distance will admit." The council consisted of the Commander in Chief, Maj. Gen. Israel Putnam, and Brig. Gens. William Heath, Joseph Spencer, Nathanael Greene, Lord Stirling, John Morin Scott, James Wadsworth, and Nathaniel Heard. The proceedings of the council, in the writing of Joseph Reed, are in the *Washington Papers*. Lord Stirling's plan for attacking Staten Island, dated July, 1776, is in the *Washington Papers*.

Two Ships of Force with their Tenders have sailed up Hudson's River.<sup>20</sup> I am apprehensive, that they design to seize the Passes in the Highlands by Land, which I am informed may be done by a small Body of Men. I must, therefore request you, instantly to desire General Ten Broeck,<sup>21</sup> to march down as great a Force as he can collect to secure them, particularly the Post where the Road runs over Anthony's Nose.

Send off an Express directly (if you please) to the West Parts of Connecticut, desiring them to collect all their Force at the same Point, since I have the highest Reason to believe, it will be absolutely necessary, if it was only to prevent an Insurrection of your own Tories. I am, etc.

P.S. A Return must be immediately made to me of the Number of Men you collect.<sup>22</sup>

## **To THE NEW YORK LEGISLATURE**

Head Quarters, July 14, 1776.

Gentn.: The passage of the Enemy up the North River, is a point big with many Consequences to the Public Interest; one particularly occurs to me well deserving your attention, and to prevent which, I shall gladly give every assistance in my power, consistent with the Safety of the Army. I am informed, there are several passes on each side the River, upon which the Communication with Albany depends, of so commanding a Nature, that an inconsiderable Body of

20. The *Phoenix*, of 40 guns, and the *Rose*, of 20, with three tenders, were sent up the Hudson to cut off supplies which came down the river to New York. They anchored in Tappan Bay. Clinton had already stationed regiments at Fort Constitution, Fort Montgomery, and Newburgh, and ordered a chain of craft to be ready to act as fireboats at the Narrows at Fort Constitution.

21. Brig. Gen. Petrus Ten Broeck, of the New York Militia.

22. Precisely this same letter was sent to the Dutchess County, N.Y., Committee on July 13.

Men may defend them against the largest Numbers. It may be, that on Board these Ships there may be Troops for this purpose, who expecting to be joined by the disaffected in that Quarter, or Confiding in their own Strength, may endeavour to seize those defiles in which case the intercourse between the two Armies, both by land and Water, will be wholly cut off; than which a greater Misfortune could hardly befall the Service and Army, I must intreat you, to take the measure into Consideration and if possible provide against an Evil so much to be apprehended. I should hope the Militia of those Counties, might be used on such an Emergency until further provision was made; I have also thought it very probable, those Ships may have carried up Arms and Ammunition, to be dealt out to those who may favor their Cause and cooperate with them at a prefix'd time. I would, to guard against this submit to your Consideration, the propriety of writing to the leading Men on our Side in these Counties, to be very vigilant in observing any movements of this kind, in order that so dangerous a Scheme may be nipped in the Bud. For that purpose to keep the utmost attention to the Conduct of the principle Tories in those parts; any attempts of intercourse with the Ships and all other Circumstances which may lead to a discovery of their Schemes and the Destruction of their Measures. I am Gentn. &c.

**To THE COMMITTEE OF ORANGE COUNTY, NEW YORK**

Head Quarters, New York, July 14, 1776.

Gentn: Nothing can be more pleasing, than on all occasions, to see the People ready to fly to the protection of any part of the Country where there is any danger from the Enemy; but at this extreme busy Season, I cannot recommend your keeping the Regiment embodied. It would be well to notify them all to be ready at a Moments Warning, to Assemble at any place they may be call'd to. Every precaution ought to be taken to prevent the Men of War from getting any Supplies of fresh Provisions, or keeping up any intercourse or Correspondence with the disaffected Inhabitants. I shall be much obliged for timely Information of every Manœuvre of the Ships and Tenders up the River, and hope that every necessary Step will be taken, to prevent any of our Vessels falling into their hands. I am, etc.

**To THE SECRET COMMITTEE OF THE NEW YORK LEGISLATURE**

Head Quarters, July 15, 1776.

Gentn: In answer to your favor of yesterday, I beg leave to acquaint you, that I have consulted with such of the General Officers as could be easily convened, with respect to the prisoners confined in the Goal of this City. We are all of opinion that to enlarge them, or permit their continuance here is equally

dangerous; no other Course therefore remains, than to send them to some place where they can be safely kept, can have no Influence, and consequently do us no Injury. If such a Place could be conveniently found in the Province, it would be most proper, but if not, we are of opinion they should be sent to some other and that without any delay. To obviate any difficulty which may arise, from the Authority of one Province sending its Prisoners to another, I will most chearfully Co-operate with you, so as to give the Measure the weight it may derive from my General Command. The Place which in this case, has been proposed is Farmington in Connecticut.

The Multiplicity of other Engagements obliges me to Solicit your Attention and Care to these Matters, which are rather of Civil than Military concern, and I would particularly request you, to Consult and determine upon some method to remove Persons out of Town, whose Conduct, Connections and Office afford the Strongest presumption of their remaining here, with dangerous and unfriendly Views to the American Cause. An indiscriminate order, to remove all who do not belong to the Army or Connected with it, or have not taken up Arms to defend the City, would probably involve many innocent and inoffensive Persons in Difficulty. On the other hand, to leave the City open to Spies and Emissaries from the Enemy, and facilitate their Intelligence is totally inconsistent with common prudence; I must therefore, beg your Advice and Assistance in this delicate and difficult circumstance.

**To GOVERNOR JONATHAN TRUMBULL**

Head Quarters, New York, July 15, 1776.

Sir: Since my last, two of the Enemy's Ships, one of Forty the other Twenty Guns, taking advantage of a Strong Wind and tide, passed us, notwithstanding a Warm fire from all our Batteries. they now lie in Tappan Sea, between twenty and thirty Miles up Hudson's River, where no Batteries from the shore can molest them. their Views, no doubt are to cut off all Communication between this and Albany by Water, which they Effectually will do. If the Gundolas, Row Gallies &c. from Connecticut and Providence were here, I should think of making their Station uncomfortable if Possible; I must request they may be sent on as soon as Conveniently can be. I have wrote Governor Cooke requesting the same of him, 'Tis but reasonable to suppose, these Ships have a Number of Small Arms on Board, which are intended to put into the hands of the Disaffected on the North River, and in the back Parts of this Province, when a favorable opportunity may offer, for their making use of them against us. I am sorry to say their Number, by the best information

I can get is great. Inclosed is a Letter I wrote the 11th. Inst. which thro' mistake, was neglected by the Thursday Post. We have one large Row Galley nearly compleated and another which may be ready by the time they arrive from your Honor and Governor Cooke; the whole when collected will be sufficient to attack the two Ships up the River, as the Channel they now occupy is narrow which will prevent working their Guns to Advantage. I am, etc.<sup>47</sup>

## **To THE NEW YORK LEGISLATURE**

Head Quarters, New York, July 17, 1776.

Gentn.: Your Letter of the 15th Inst. covering the resolution of the same date<sup>58</sup> was duly received; which I beg leave to say was Noble and does honor to your respectable Body; It likewise adds further proof of your determination, to afford me all possible Assistance, in discharging the Important Duties of my Office. It is impossible to say *what may be* Necessary, but I shall conduct as the exigencies of the case may require, and doubt not your cheerful Aid and Assistance whenever

called for. It has been out of my power, to procure more Whale Boats than are absolutely Necessary for the Night Guards, I doubt not you

47. The same letter was sent to Governor Cooke.

58. Sparks quotes the resolve, which was to the effect that if the Commander in Chief thought it necessary to evacuate the city of New York the legislature would cheerfully cooperate with him in every necessary measure.

will be able to procure the Number you want from the Western Shore of the Sound, which may be easily transported by land or by the Way of Kingsbridge to the North River. I have the Honor etc.<sup>59</sup>

59. On July 18 instructions were issued by Washington, through Lord Stirling, for governing the ferries in the East and North (or Hudson) Rivers. Malcom McEwen and Daniel Green were to superintend the East River Ferry to Long Island and the one at Peck's Slip. McEwen was a lieutenant in Col. John Lasher's New York Militia, and he was to receive a dollar a day for this ferry duty "after deducting his pay"; Green, having no military employment, received a dollar a day. Capt. John Johnson, of the First New York Regiment, and Lieut. Abraham Mesier, of Lasher's regiment, were to superintend the North River Ferry between Powles Hook and Hooghbook. They were to receive half a dollar in addition to their regimental pay.

## **To GOVERNOR JONATHAN TRUMBULL**

New York, July 19, 1776.

Sir: The inclosed Extracts from the proceedings of Congress, which I have the Honor to transmit you, will discover their anxiety respecting our Army here, and their wishes to have it reinforced. I shall only add, that the Situation of our affairs, demands the most speedy Succour, and my request that you use your good offices for Expediting the New Levies as fast as possible. I have also inclosed you a Copy of a Letter and sundry Resolutions which I received yesterday from the Convention of this State. you will perceive thereby, that they have been deliberating on Sundry

important measures and are exerting themselves in the most vigorous manner, to defeat the wicked designs of our Common Enemy, and such disaffected Persons as may attempt to favor their Views. They also contain a request, that I should solicit you, to devise some mode for Keeping up a Communication and Intercourse between your State and this, and suggest the Expediency of your forming a Camp of 6000. Men about Byrom River, to co-operate with those they are Collecting, in order to hang on the rear of the Enemy, in case they land above Kingsbridge and attempt to cut off the Communication between the Country and this City. As the Quota of Men requested by Congress for the defence of this Place, is not yet arrived, I could not conceive myself at Liberty to ask of you, to furnish such

an additional number, altho' I cannot but observe that the scheme seems well calculated for the purposes they have in View, and might be productive of the most salutary consequences, in case of an attempt of that sort. Colo. Broom and Mr. Duer two Members of the Convention wait on you upon the Subject and will fully point out, the object they have in view, and their Ideas of the importance and expediency of the Plan, and to them I beg leave to refer you. I am Sir, etc.

## **To THE NEW YORK LEGISLATURE**

Head Quarters, New York, July 19, 1776.

Gentn.: By Messrs. Broome and Duer, I was yesterday favored with your several Resolves of the 16th. Instant.

The spirit and decision in which they are formed, will I doubt not appear in their execution, and as far as I can cooperate, I shall most chearfully contribute all my Aid and Assistance. The State of this Army would make it improper for me, to send up any General Officer in the Continental Service, to take the Command of the Levies proposed to be raised; and from the nature of the Service, I should apprehend a knowledge of the Country and its Inhabitants would be very necessary. General Clinton on all Accounts appears to me the most suitable Person, and as the appointment is made

dependent on me, I shall nominate him, unless some objections should be made, or Difficulty arise which I do not now know.

The Deputy Commissaries I will take advice upon, and have them appointed as soon as possible. The State of the Pay Office here did not admit a full compliance with your request of the Loan of £20,000, there not being so much in the Paymaster's hands at this time. However, that so good a work might not be delayed, I immediately gave a Warrant for 20,000 Dollars, and as fast as Circumstances will admit shall make up the remainder. I have inclosed your Resolutions to Governor Trumbull, on the Subject of forming a Camp at Byrom River, for the security of the Communication with New York, but at the same time I very much doubt his ability to carry it into execution. The Quota of Troops to be furnished by Connecticut, for the Assistance of this Army, is not half compleated, notwithstanding the most urgent and pressing Instances on the Subject, which afford a very dull prospect of fixing a New Camp, adequate to the intended design. and I very much fear, the Attempt would obstruct the raising the Levies now ordered and in the end prove ineffectual. at the same time I most heartily approve the Measure, and should rejoice to see it carried into Execution, in the compleatest manner. Since writing the above, your favor of the 18th. Inst. inclosing Colo. Cortlandt and Capt. Platt's<sup>74</sup> report is come to hand; the Spirit and Alacrity of the Militia in so readily turning out at this busy

74. Capt. Richard Platt, of the First New York Regiment.

Season, is a very encouraging circumstance, and does them great honor. I observe Colo Fellows<sup>75</sup> of Massachusetts Bay, mentioned as having marched in. If his Troops compose a part of those destined for this Army, it is my intention, that all under that circumstance should come immediately down and be properly arranged; and I observe there will be the less inconvenience, as Messrs. Cortlandt and Platt observe, that they had such a surplus of Men as to enable them to discharge a Number. I am etc.



P.S. with respect to Amunition, I had flattered myself, that the Provincial Stock, would not only have been sufficient for the purposes of its immediate defence, but in case of necessity, have assisted us; I shall endeavour, under a late Direction of Congress, to procure what is to be had from the adjoining Mills.

**To THE SECRET COMMITTEE OF THE NEW YORK LEGISLATURE**

Head Quarters, New York, July 19, 1776.

Gentn.: I am favored with yours of the 17th. Inst. My unacquaintedness with Hudsons River and with every other circumstance, necessary to form a judgment of the mode of defending it, will incapacitate me, from giving you the Assistance and advice you politely ask. I must entirely refer it to your own Judgment and skill, only assuring you, that it will give me great pleasure, if any thing effectual can be done, and

75. Col. John Fellows. He was, later, brigadier general, Massachusetts Militia.

that I will most readily give all the assistance in my power. I had some Intentions of throwing obstructions in the Passage at Mount Washington, but so many difficulties and obstacles have retarded it, that I much fear my being able to compleat it. however it is a Matter so purely confidential, if it can be effected, that I must desire the most profound Secresy may be observed on the Subject. I heartily wish you Success in the Measures you may adopt, and am etc.

**To THE COMMITTEE OF THE CITY OF NEW YORK**

Head Quarters, New York, July 19, 1776.

Gentn.: I enclose you a Copy of a Resolution of the Provincial Convention of the State of New York, dated the 16th. Instant recommending it to all the General and Sub Committees, to apprehend and secure all such Persons, whose going at large at this Critical time, they may deem dangerous to the Safety of the State. As this City is hourly threatened with an attack from a powerful Enemy;

and as there is too much reason to apprehend, from their Vicinity to this City, and from the number of Suspicious Characters still in it, that they may recieve intelligence, which may counteract all my Operations for its defence, I strongly recommend it to you to remove, for some time,

all equivocal and suspicious Characters. This appears to me to be the Spirit of the Resolution of the Provincial Convention; and the propriety of it is founded on the Law of Self preservation, and confirmed by the Practice of all Nations in a State of War.

I esteem it my duty to add my recommendation, to that of the Provincial Convention, that if, through an Ill timed lenity, my attempts to secure this Province should be Baffled, the blame of it may not be imputed to my want of Vigilance.

I have inclosed a list of Persons represented as dangerous,<sup>76</sup> as I can only speak from Information, I must rely upon your taking proper Steps with them; unless, from your better knowledge, you determine them of different Characters than Represented. I am etc.

## **To THE NEW JERSEY LEGISLATURE**

New York, July 21, 1776.

Sir: As we have the strongest reason to believe, the period is just at hand or will soon be, when we shall have the most pressing occasion for Troops, successfully to oppose and defeat the formidable Army we expect against us; I confess I feel myself not a little concerned for the slow manner in which the Levies come in, that were required by Congress, and which will be essential to counteract the efforts of our Enemies.

Not many more, than Twelve hundred of the Quota to be

76. Maj. Gen. Nathanael Greene handled this loyalist business. He wrote (July 27) reporting his experience with these Tories: "I have examined the prisoners, and find them to be a poor parcel of Ignorant, Cowardly fellows. Two are Taylors, named John and Isaac Dunbar, and the other two

common labourers named Petit and Will Smith. They candidly confess, that they set off with an intention of going to Staten Island, but not with any intention of Joining the Enemy; but to get out of the way of fighting here....There has been a draught amongst the Militia to fill the New Levies, and it was rumored that these were a part that were drawn. It was also reported, that they were to go to the Northern Army, and that almost all that went there dyed or were killed. The prospect was so shocking to them, and to their GrandMothers and Aunts, I believe they perswaded them to run away. Never did I see fellows more frightened, they wept like a parcel of Children, and appear exceeding sorrowful....I beg your Excellency's direction how to dispose of them, they dont appear to be acquainted with one public matter. They have been Toryish; but I fancy not from principle, but from its being the prevailing Sentiment in the County.” Greene's letter is in the *Washington Papers*.

furnished by your State are yet arrived, and I am apt to conclude that it will be a long time before the whole can be made up by Voluntary Inlistments. As the succour they are meant to afford, by the delay that may attend that mode of raising them, may be too late and after an important Stroke has been given us: I submit it to your consideration, whether it may not be prudent, to devise some other way by which they may be raised, and their Aid immediately had.

Voluntary Inlistments, without doubt are preferable to any other mode, if they could be effected in time, and what I would wish for, But as there is too much reason to fear they cannot, from the small progress already made; the critical Situation of our affairs requires, that other means should be used; and in full Confidence, that nothing will be omitted on the part of your Honorable Body, to forward the Quota required of them by Congress. I am etc.

P.S. Ten Sail of Ships are just discovered in the Offing below Sandy Hook, what they are, I know not as yet.

**To THE SECRET COMMITTEE OF THE NEW YORK LEGISLATURE**

Head Quarters, New York, July 21, 1776.

Gentn.: Yours of the 18th. Inst. I duly received and note the Contents,

and am very sorry to hear the Forts in the Highlands are in so defenceless a Situation. Thro' such Variety of business, which calls my closest attention, it has been, and still is, Impossible for me personally to reconnoitre all the different Posts under my Command: but was so sensible of the Importance of the Fortresses in the High Lands, that I ordered Lord Stirling to visit them, which he did early in the Summer, and reported to me their Situation at that time; and thro' his representations, I continued two Gentlemen in Continental pay, who were acting as Engineers, under orders from the Authority of this State; I have repeatedly pressed Col. Clinton to spare no pains to put them on the best footing Possible, and indeed, I had reason to suppose they were in tolerable order to Receive the Enemy. By the Returns there appears to be 6, 32 pounders besides some 9, 6, 4, and 3 pounders, and enclosed is a Letter for Governor Trumbull, begging him to assist you all in his power. We were so short of Matrosses, that I was necessitated to draft 600 from the different Battalions to join the Artillery in this Place. The 14. with Colo. Clinton, are of the old Regiment and experienced; to these he may add, by drafting a sufficient number of Stout Active Men from the other Corps under his Command, and put them immediately to exercising the Artillery. 'Tis not in my Power to reinforce those Garrisons with more Men; as but about 5,000 of the New Levies have yet arrived in Camp out of 15,000 Ordered; I will this day send up Mr. Machin a Lieut. of the Train, who has just returned from overseeing the

Works at Boston; he is as proper a person, as any I can send, being an ingenious faithful hand, and one that has had considerable experience as an Engineer; I shall enjoin on him to attend closely to the business he is going to execute. Rest assured Gentn. that every assistance in my power shall be most chearfully granted and that I am with Esteem, Yours &c.

P.S. to the above was added the Acct. of the Battle of Sullivan's Island, Charlestown South Carolina.<sup>85</sup>

**To GOVERNOR JONATHAN TRUMBULL**

New York, July 24, 1776.

Sir: I was honoured yesterday with your favor of the 17th Inst. and return you my thanks for your kind attention to and compliance with my request for the Row Gallies. They are not yet arrived as I know of.

I wrote Congress by the return Express that brought yours, respecting Colo Ward's Regiment, and as the Post comes in every day, It is probable I shall soon have their Answer. The result, I will transmit you by the first opportunity, and would recommend, that the Regiment be put under Marching orders, that they may proceed without loss of time whatever way Congress shall direct.

The orders you have given to your Armed Cruizers,

85. See note to Washington's letter to Congress, July 19, 1776, *ante*.

for stopping provision Vessels, appear to me extremely necessary. I have mentioned the Matter to Congress, and shall warmly recommend it to the consideration of the Convention of this State. If it should be attended with Inconvenience to individuals; Yet necessity and Public utility, ought to be first considered and outweigh every thing else. But it Cannot, there is nothing but what they can readily dispose of, for the use of the Army and for ready Cash, so that every ground of Objection, must be nugatory. I am &c.

## **To THE NEW YORK LEGISLATURE**

New York, July 24, 1776.

Sir: I have been honored with your favor of the 20th Inst. with it several inclosures. I observe the Sentiments of your Honorable Body, on the impracticability of removing the Stock from Nassau Island, and the Measures they have adopted for securing them there and protecting the Inhabitants, and sincerely wish they may prove adequate.

I have long since and frequently requested the Commissary, to purchase all the fatted Cattle and Sheep from the Island, that he possibly could in preference to any other; he informs me that he has had many from thence, and that he now has persons employed in different parts for that purpose. The expediency of the measure strikes me so forcibly, that

you may depend every means in my power, will be directed to its execution.

Agreeable to your request, I shall Continue Col. Livingston<sup>2</sup> at his present Post, for the protection of the Inhabitants against the Insults of the Enemy's Cruizers, unless something should happen to make his removal necessary.

When the several Regiments are raised and I am certified thereof, and of the Places of Rendezvous, I will direct the Muster Master General to attend and Compleat the Musters.

Governor Trumbull having Informed me by Letter Yesterday, that since the arrival of the Fleet at the Hook, many of the Enemy's Frigates and Ships have been stationed between Montauk Point and Block Island, to intercept the Trade from the Sound, and in which they had been but too successful in taking several provision Vessels, and of the impossibility, that any should escape falling into their hands; he had ordered the Armed Vessels in the Service of Connecticut, to stop and detain all Vessels going down the Sound with Provisions, till the Continental Congress or the Convention of the States to which they belong, could be apprized of the hazards attending their proceeding in their Voyages and give orders thereon. I beg leave to recommend the Matter to the Consideration of your Honble. Body, and submit it to them, whether it may not be expedient to lay a General Embargo, or prohibition upon all exports of this kind from your State, except such as the Congress or yourselves may order.

2. Col. Henry Beekman Livingston, of the Fourth New York Regiment.

The propriety of keeping the Enemy from supplies of this Sort, and providing a Sufficiency for our own Army is so evident, that words are unnecessary upon the Subject. However I cannot but

observe as my opinion, that the former will be impossible to effect, unless some General restraining regulation is come into. No care, nor Industry, nor honesty, on the part of Exporters, will be able to elude the Vigilance and Activity of their almost Innumerable Cruizers. But when iris considered, that as long as a free export of any Articles of this Nature is tollerated, disaffected Persons may easily fall into their hands with impunity, nor any means be left us to ascertain their Guilt. When there is strong reason to believe, that some have designedly done so, and almost incontestible proof, from Sundry depositions of deserters and others, that a Ship that went from hence, sailed with no other View and joined the Enemy at the Hook; I incline to think the measure not only advisable but Necessary; Especially, as the large Consumption of Provision by our Army, affords and will afford a ready Cash Market, for all that Individuals may have to dispose of, and take away every objection of injury on that head; were it otherwise, private advantages and Emoluments must always give place to the public good when they are incompatible.

The last deserters from the Enemy Inform us, since they have heard of our forming a Camp at Amboy, they have talked much of turning their Views to long Island

and regaling themselves with large Supplies of Provisions they intend to get from thence. This is an additional circumstance, to induce the Commissary to purchase the Cattle, there before any other. I have the honor etc.

P. S. When the Ships of War &c run up the River, I wrote Governors Trumbull and Cooke for some of their Row Gallies; supposing they might be of Service, in attempting something against the Ships. I expect three or four every hour, besides the one I have. If the secret Committee are forming any plan against the Ships, in which they think they may be usefully employed, If they will let me know, I shall be glad to Co-operate with them and furnish every Assistance the Gallies can give, if not otherwise materially engaged.

I am just now informed, that the Ship mentioned above to have gone to the Enemy was fitted out by the Congress, under the Command of a Captain Hilton<sup>3</sup> who has acted this base part.

**To THE MASSACHUSETTS LEGISLATURE**

New York, July 25, 1776.

Gentn.: Congress having impowred me to appoint suitable places of Rendezvous for the Battalions raising in your

3. Captain Hilton's ship was captured by the Connecticut armed sloop *Spy*. Governor Trumbull wrote to the New York Legislature respecting the capture and, in reply, was favored with a resolve (July 23) forbidding the exportation of provisions from New York City under penalty of being held an enemy to the United States.

Government for the Northern Army and to communicate the same to you, Also to advance them one Month's pay &c., as you will perceive by the inclosed Copy of their Resolution, which I have the honor to transmit; I must request the favor of you, to direct them to March by Companies as they are raised, to Skenesborough, and there receive orders and instructions for their conduct, from the Officer Commanding the Northern Army; and also to advance the Month's pay and take every Necessary Measure, for forwarding their March and complying with the purport of the said Resolve, assuring you that whatever money may be advanced necessarily in carrying the same into execution shall be repaid to your Order.

Before I conclude, I cannot but Confess, that I do not clearly understand what Battalions Congress allude to, and therefore beg leave to refer you to the requisition, I presume they made you upon the subject. I am etc.<sup>7</sup>

**To GOVERNOR JONATHAN TRUMBULL**

New York, August 1, 1776.

Sir:



7. The same letter was sent to the New Hampshire Legislature and to Governor Trumbull.

Congress having been pleased to empower me, to order Colo. Ward's Regiment wherever I might think it necessary; I take the liberty of requesting you to direct him to March it immediately to this Place, where I am of opinion, the Service requires it and their Aid may be extremely material, especially as the Levies come in very slowly.

Since my last nothing of Importance has occurred or that is worthy of Notice; Except an Augmentation of about Twenty Nine Ships and Brigs, with Seven or Eight smaller Vessels to the Enemy's Fleet. I have not learned certainly what they bring; however some Troops were seen landing yesterday, which the Gentlemen who observed them, took to be Artillery Men. It is not Improbable that they were some of the Guards, whose dress is pretty much like that of the Artillery. I have the Honor etc.

P.S. The three Gallies, which you were kind enough to order, are safely arrived, as are two from Rhode Island, with these and one that we have finished here, we propose attempting something against the Ships above and are preparing for it.

### **To THE MASSACHUSETTS LEGISLATURE**

Head Quarters, August 2, 1776.

Sir: Your Letter of the 16th Ult., in behalf of the Council of Massachusetts Bay, is duly Received; the Contents have been attended to; and I have the pleasure to inform you, there is a prospect of an early exchange of the Prisoners taken in the Yankee Hero Privateer. As Mr. Tracy negotiated this Matter, and had an Interview with Lord Howe on board the Eagle, Man of War, I must refer you to him for particulars.

Congress authorised Me to comply with General Howe's request of giving Governor Skene for Mr. Lovell, I have wrote informing Genl. Howe thereof, and expect soon to have Mr. Lovell sent to some part of the Continent.

Assure the Members of your Honorable Body, it gives me particular pleasure, that I had it in my power to relieve one of their Citizens from a long and tedious Imprisonment, and shall esteem myself happy in complying with any request they may make

consistent with the Important Duties of my Office. I have the Honor to be etc.

Augst. 5th, P.S. on the 11th. Ulto. I wrote your Honble. Body, respecting the St. Johns, Nova Scotia and Penobscot Indians, since which I have heard nothing from them. It is a Matter of the greatest consequence, must therefore beg an Answer, acquainting me what steps they have taken, by the first post.

Since the above I have a Letter from General Howe, acquainting me he has sent for Mr. Lovell for the proposed exchange.

**To GOVERNOR NICHOLAS COOKE**

New York, August 5, 1776.

Sir: I have been duly honored with your two favors of the 20th. and 29th. Ulto. and wish your acceptance of my thanks for your Kind and ready Compliance, with my requisition for the Gallies, and the Matters of Intelligence transmitted in the last. The Account given Capt. Bucklin, on whose success I congratulate you, by Capt. Bell of the Portuguese seizing our Vessels, I fear is too true. Their dependance on the British Crown for protection and Aid, against their Spanish Neighbours, obliges them to comply with everything required of them. Capt. Bucklin's information of the Fleet he saw, I dare say is not to be doubled. It is probable

they arrived yesterday; for twenty five Ships then came into the Hook. These make from 90 to 100. that have come in since Thursday Sen-night.

Our Gallies, on Saturday Evening, had a Smart engagement with the Ships up the River. The Inclosed Copy of a Letter from Colo. Tupper, under whose Genl Command they were, will give

you the particulars. Tho' they did not take the Ships, nor is it certain what Damage they Sustained; I have the pleasure to inform you, Our officers and Men behaved with the greatest spirit and resolution; the injury their little Fleet sustained Testifies their Courage. It is said, the Ships were several times hulled by our Shot, they still remain up the River, The Gallies must be a little repaired before anything further can be attempted, provided it should be thought advisable.

By a Letter from Colo. Hancock of the 31st. Ulto., I am Authorised to say, that a Continental Ship had arrived at Chester, not far below Philadelphia, with 366 pigs Lead, 54 Boxes of Musquet Ball, 1000 Stand of Arms with Bayonets, 1 Barrel Flints and 193 whole Barrels of Gun Powder. He also adds, that a Privateer had sent in a West India Man, having on Board, besides produce, 1100 Johans. and 700 Guineas. I wish the Ship Capt Bucklin saw may get in safe. I have the Honor to be &c.

## **To THE NEW JERSEY LEGISLATURE**

New York, August 7, 1776.

Sir: I have received repeated information, that a number of Persons known to be inimical to the cause of the American States, or of a Suspicious Character, have lately removed from this and other places into the County of Monmouth in New Jersey, with intent no doubt from its situation; of Communicating with and Aiding our Enemies. All those of Similar Characters on Long Island and the other Counties adjacent to this place, will be secured by to morrow Morning, and I must urge the necessity of your Congress adopting the same Measure, in all those Parts of your Province, which are most contiguous to the Enemy. There are some also, of very dangerous Characters, who I am informed are lurking in the Neighbourhood of Hackinsack and what they call the English Neighbourhood, particularly Benjamin Hugget and Frederick Rhinelanders; this Measure is now become the more necessary, as from the Intelligence I have this day Received, there is the greatest reason to believe, that the Enemy intend to begin their Operations in a very few days, and that with a very powerful force; for not only a Considerable part of the Foreign Troops, the British Guards and an additional Number of Scotch Troops are lately arrived at Staten Island; but the Army from

the Southward under Genl. Clinton also joined them last Thursday; and the remainder of the foreign Troops have been spoke with on the

Coast and are momentarily expected; this must also urge the absolute necessity, of your Congress Instantly adopting some effectual measures for compleating the Troops Voted, and for affording every other reinforcement to this Place, that is in their Power; by detaching a Considerable Body of the Militia, or in such other manner, as will be more effectual. Of the 3300. voted by your State, we have but 1450, and in the same proportion from the other Colonies, so that you will easily conceive, what an Alarming Situation we are in. As the Harvest is now over and the Militia engaged most chearfully to return if Necessary, I persuade myself they will readily turn out, upon a Representation being made to them of the Necessity; what from a Deficiency of the old Regiments, Sickness, and the failure of New Levies, we are in danger of being outnumbered by the Enemy, at least doubly, if not more. The Consequences may be fatal, unless prevented by the Spirit of the Country. I have dispatched Expresses to Connecticut to call in their Militia immediately, with their Arms, Blankets and what Ammunition they have; as the Supply here, to suit their Guns is attended with much difficulty and delay. I must beg your attention to the same Circumstance, as far as the Situation of things will admit, but so as not hinder from Marching, those who cannot come so provided. I am &c.

## **To GOVERNOR JONATHAN TRUMBULL**

Head Quarters, August 7, 1776.

Sir: By two deserters this day, we have the following Intelligence, Vizt., that General Clinton and Lord Cornwallis with the whole Southern Army, have arrived and landed on Staten Island from South Carolina, in number about 3. or 4,000; that the Fleet which came in a few days since, are the Hessians and Scotch Highlanders, part of 12,000 who were left off Newfound Land; in the whole making about 30,000 Men; and that, it is said by Officers of the Navy and Army, they are to attack N. York, Long Island, &c. in the course of a Week. The uncommon movements of the Fleet this day, together with the above intelligence, convince us, that in all human probability, there can but

a very few days pass, before a general Engagement takes place. When I consider the Weakness of our Army by Sickness, the great extent of Ground we have to defend, and the amazing slowness with which the Levies come forward, I think it absolutely necessary, the Neighbouring Militia should be immediately sent in to our assistance; and, agreeable to your Letter of the 6th July, I have ordered the Colonels, with their Regiments, to March, with all Convenient Speed, to this Place. The disgrace of the British Arms to the Southward, and the Season being far advanced, will make them exert every nerve against us in this Quarter. To trust altogether in the justice of our cause, without our own utmost exertions, would be tempting Providence; and, that you

may judge of our Situation, I give you the present state of our Army:

Copy from the General Return of the Army of the United States of America, now on New York, Governor's, and Long Islands, and at Powles Hook, Augst. 3d., 1776 Vizt.

Present, fit for duty, 10,514; Sick, present, 3,039; Sick, absent, 629, on Command 2,946, on furlow 97: Total 17,225. By this, you will see, we are to oppose an Army of 30,000 experienced Veterans, with about one third the Number of Raw Troops, and these scattered, some 15 Miles apart. This will be handed you by Mr. Root, to him, I must refer you for further particulars; and have the pleasure to be etc.

## **To THE COMMITTEE OF SAFETY OF HARTFORD, CONNECTICUT**

Head Quarters, New York, August 7, 1776.

Gentn.: I am to acquaint you, that I lately recived a Letter from Major French, who is a prisoner in your Place, signifying that his parole would be out the 12th Inst., and that he had no intentions of renewing it. This conduct I must Confess, appears very extraordinary, as he cannot be ignorant, that he has been hitherto considered as a prisoner of War, and that accepting his parole at first was an indulgence granted, solely to make his situation more easy and Comfortable; and to prevent his experiencing the disagreeable Effects of a close confinement. I have expressed my

sentiments to him freely on the Subject in my Answer, which I inclose unsealed for your perusal. I doubt not, you will pursue such measures, as are most proper on this occasion. You will please to seal and deliver the Letter inclosed, without delay, to avoid any trouble that may arise on Account of not delivering it, previous to the date before mentioned. I am, etc.

**To JESSE ROOT**

Head Quarters, New York, August 7, 1776.

Sir: I have the most Authentic intelligence, that General Clinton with his whole Southern Army, 1000 Hessians and a number of Highlanders, have within these few days, joined General Howe. that 11,000 more, foreign Troops, are hourly expected having been left on the banks of Newfound Land a few days ago. An attack is now therefore to be expected, which will probably decide the Fate of America. The Levies from New Jersey, New York, and Connecticut are not compleated within one half of their Establishment and my whole Army much Short of its Compliment.

Under these Circumstances Sir, I must desire you to apply to the Several Committees or other Authority of Connecticut, to hasten down, as fast as possible, the Militia, and I cannot doubt but a sence of Public duty and the imminent

Dangers, to which every thing that is dear to us is exposed, will induce every true friend and Lover of his Country, to exert his utmost Powers for its Salvation and Defence. I am etc.

**To TIMOTHY EDWARDS**

New York, August 7, 1776.

Sir: The inclosed Copy of a Resolution of Congress, entered into the 2d Inst., will discover to you their Sentiments, on the Subject of employing the Stockbridge Indians in the Service of the United States.

It is certain they differed some time ago, from the Commissioners of Indian affairs and put a Stop to their proceedings in this Instance; But finding that our Enemy's are prosecuting the War, with unexampled Severity and Industry, and that these Indians are anxious to take a part in our favor; they have instructed me to employ in the Service of the American States, as many of them as I may think proper; I therefore take the Liberty to request your friendly exertions on this Occasion and that you will engage in the Service, as great a Number of them as you possibly can. I would wish you to give the Whole of them or any part that may choose it, the liberty of Joining either this Army, or that in

the Northern Department under Genl. Schuyler. I do not think it will be proper, as they are desirous of becoming apart of the Army, to Oblige them to join, where they have not an Inclination to go; and therefore recommend that they should be indulged; in whatever way their fancy may lead, as to Joining either the one or the other Army, partially or wholly.

The Situation of our affairs, will readily suggest to you, the Necessity of dispatch; at the same time, that it will point out the expediency of engaging as many of them as you can. The business may be attended with a degree of trouble, which I could wish not to happen, but yet I am persuaded will be undertaken with alacrity. I am &c.

## **To THE NEW YORK LEGISLATURE**

New York, August 8, 1776.

Sir: I have been favored with your Letter of the 6th. Inst. and am happy, to find the Nomination I made of Genl. Clinton,<sup>71</sup> in consequence of your Request to appoint an Officer to the Command of the Levies on both sides Hudson's River, has met the approbation of your Honble. Body. His acquaintance with the Country, abilities and zeal for the Cause are the Motives that induced me to make choice of him. However, I am led to conclude, from that part of your Letter which desires me to transmit him his appointment, with the

71. Brig. Gen. George Clinton. (See Washington's letter to the Secret Committee of the New York Legislature, July 19, 1776, *ante*.)

Resolution Subjecting the Levies on both sides of the River at his command, that your Honorable Body entertain Ideas of the Matter, somewhat different from what I do, or ever did.

When I was honored with your Letter of the 16th Ultio, with the Resolves of Convention upon this Subject, the State of the Army under my Command would not allow me to send a General Officer in the Continental Service, to Command the Levies you then proposed to raise; supposing I had been authorised to do it; but considering myself without power in this Instance.

The Levies altogether of a Provincial Nature—to be raised by you and Subject to your direction, I esteemed the nomination of a General Officer over them, entrusted to my choice, a matter of favor and of Compliment, and as such I gratefully fill it.

I am persuaded, I expressed myself in this Manner to the Gentn. who were pleased to attend me upon the occasion and that they had the same Ideas. Under the Influence of this Opinion, all I expected was, that an Appointment would be made in conformity to my Nomination, If there was no Objection to the Gentleman I proposed, conceiving then as I do now, if he was approved by Convention, he was their Officer and deriving his appointment and Authority from them. In this light I presume Genl. Clinton must be viewed and his powers over the Levies you allude to, flow from you. Least accident may have mislaid the Letter I wrote you on the Subject, I have inclosed an Extract of it, so far as it had relation to it.

It is not in my Power to send an Experienced Officer at this time to the post you mention; I trust that Colo. Clinton<sup>72</sup> will be equall to the Command of both the Highland Fortifications, they are under his direction at present.

In respect to the two Commissaries, I thought the Matter had been fixed; but as it is not, I have requested Mr. Trumbull, who has the Charge of this, to wait upon and agree with the Convention,



on proper persons to conduct the business and in such a way that their purchases and his may not clash; to him therefore, I beg leave to refer you upon this Subject.

I am extremely obliged by the order for the Telescope. I have obtained it, and will try to employ it for the Valuable purposes you designed it.

I shall pay proper attention to your Members and persons employed in their Service, and give it in General Orders that they be permitted to pass our Guards without Interruption.

Before I conclude, I cannot but express my fears, lest the Enemy's Army so largely augmented, should possess themselves of the whole Stock on long Island; When the further reinforcement arrives, which they hourly expect, they may do it without a possibility on our part of preventing them.

I wish the Convention may not see Cause to regret, that they were not removed. I have the Honor to be &c.

72. Col. James Clinton, of the Second New York Regiment. He was made a brigadier general in the Continental Army Aug. 9, 1776; wounded at Fort Montgomery, N.Y., in Sir Henry Clinton's raid up the Hudson in 1777; served to the close of the war.

## **To THE NEW YORK LEGISLATURE**

New York, August 8, 1776.

Sir: By this, I mean to Communicate to your Honble. Body, the Substance of the Intelligence I received yesterday from two deserters, that came the Evening before from the Solebay Man of War. They inform, that they were in the Engagement at Sullivan's Island and give nearly the same Account as that transmitted by Genl. Lee, which you would see published by Congress. They add, that they left South Carolina about three Weeks ago, with Genl. Clinton and his whole Army, who are now arrived and landed on Staten Island; they also say, that part of Lord Howe's fleet, with Hessian and Highland Troops on board, have got in, and that the remainder, with a considerable

body, is hourly expected, which, those that have come in parted from, in a Gale of Wind of the Banks of New found land.

As the Accounts given by these Men, are direct and circumstantial, and their Authenticity corroborated by many other things that have occurred; It is not to be doubted but the number of the Enemy's Army will greatly exceed ours.

Their force which was generally expected would be considerable of itself; the unexpected augmentation of Genl Clinton's Army makes it more so. On the other hand, ours does not come up to the Intended establishment.

Under these Circumstances and as we may expect the period just at hand, when they will make their Vigorous

push, I submit it to the Consideration of your Honble. Body, whether it may not be Necessary, for your Exertions to be employed in calling in, in the most expeditious manner, such reinforcements as you can Obtain, to the Aid of this Army. I have &c.

**To TIMOTHY EDWARDS**

Head Quarters, New York, August 10, 1776.

Sir: This will be delivered you by Saml. and John two of our friends of the Stockbridge Indians, who have been here and expressed the desire of their People, to become part of the Army of the United States. Having wrote you fully on the 7th. Inst. and transmitted a Copy of the Resolution of Congress upon this Subject, which I presume will have reached you before this comes to hand, I have referred them to you for Information, in the Instance of their Application, and have only to request the favor of your early attention to what I then recommended to your care and direction. I am &c.

**To GOVERNOR JONATHAN TRUMBULL**

New York, August 11, 1776.

Sir: Necessity obliges me to trouble your honor with

some more suspected persons, whose Characters are such, as to make it unsafe for them to remain at their usual places of abode on Long Island; and there is no retreat in this Province, where they may not do some Mischief, or be less secure than our safety requires. As they are apprehended merely on Suspicion, arising from a General line of Conduct, unfriendly to the American Cause, I have given them reason to suspect from you, every Indulgence which your good judgment will admit you to allow them, consistent with the public Safety; there are few of them who will not defray their own Expences; and those few, their Companions of better Circumstances will assist, if Convenience will admit their being together in the same Place, which will be a Saving to the Public. If there are any quite destitute, I presume they must be put on the footing with other Prisoners in like Circumstances; They express a very Earnest desire to be permitted to choose their own Lodgings and accomodations, to which I see no objection. but as I have referred them intirely to you, I do not choose to enter into any Engagement on this or any other point; only adding, generally, that I could wish they might have every accomodation and Indulgence, having a Respect to their rank and Education, which may be deemed Consistent with Safety; And they are given to understand, that your humanity and Politeness will most effectually prevent their being liable to any unnecessary Hardships. I am etc.

P.S. I am just informed that Judge Jones<sup>89</sup> has obtained some Letters of Recommendation to Connecticut, from which he expects to be permitted to stay at New Haven, unless very particular Circumstances should require it. I cannot but think you will agree with me, that these Prisoners should be removed from Sea Port and Post Towns, as the intention of removal from hence is not fully answered, while they have opportunities of carrying on Correspondence.

**To THE NEW YORK LEGISLATURE**

New York, August 11, 1776.

Gentn.: In Answer to your favor of the 9th., with which I have been honored; I beg leave to inform you, that I neither wish or expect any thing more, than that the Levies raised by you, will be in Continental Pay, from the time they were called into Service. That Troops employed in a General Cause, should be supported at the General Expense, is so evidently just, that I cannot see any objection to it.

It is true, when the proceedings of your Honble. Body for raising these Levies, were first Communicated to me, and it was mentioned by the Committee who brought them, that it was expected they would be paid by the States; I did not think myself Authorised to take into Service so large a Number of Men, and therefore could not say the States would pay them. But the Situation of our affairs being much

89. Judge Thomas Jones, of the New York Supreme Court. He had been arrested in June, 1776, and paroled; again arrested in August, he was sent to Connecticut and again released on parole. He was arrested again in 1779. His case was one of unnecessary aggravation and was more of a persecution than a patriotic necessity, Judge Jones married Anne de Lancey and owned valuable real estate in New York City. He finally went to England. His history of New York during the Revolution is a work of merit.

changed and requiring their Service, I cannot but consider them as much Intitled to Continental Pay as any Troops in this Army. In this light I am persuaded Congress will View them, It is so obvious and so equitable, that no application from me can be necessary. The Bounty I imagine, as you yourselves do, will be the expence of the State, for which Indemnification will not be made by the Public. My Letter of the 8th was not meant to Comprehend this Subject; It was particularly design'd to explain my Ideas of the authority from whence Genl. Clinton's powers were derived.

I have requested Mr. Trumbull, to take the directions of the Commissaries and to see that the Levies are properly supplied with Provisions. I am extremely Concerned that the Quotas of Men to be furnished by the Neighbouring States, have proved so deficient. The busy Season and Harvest, to which it has been ascribed, being now over in a great degree; I flatter myself from the zeal they

have heretofore Manifested, they will afford every possible Assistance, they are well apprized of the Importance of this State, in the present Contest and the Necessity of maintaining it against the attempts of the Enemy.

In respect to the Militia of Albany County, as you are pleased in your proceedings of the 10th. Inst., to submit the propriety of Calling them out, to my determination; I wou'd advise, that they should not, unless the Necessity for bringing them here should be extremely great; They otherwise should remain in their County, to afford succour to the Frontier Parts of the Government,

If it should be Necessary. I have Inclosed a Copy of Lt. McMichael's report transmitted me by Genl Schuyler, from whence it will appear, If the Intelligence contained in it be true, that their aid may be required there.

I have desired Genl. Greene, on the Application of the Committee sent to Kings County, to afford them every Assistance he conveniently can, for executing the business they are upon.<sup>90</sup>

Before I conclude, I would observe, the Letter of the 9th. which I have acknowledged to have received, is without any Signature; I presume it has been omitted thro' the hurry of Business. I have the Honor to be with great respect.

## **To THE COMMITTEE OF QUEENS COUNTY, NEW YORK**

Head Quarters, New York, August 11, 1776.

Gentn.: The public exigencies, having required my apprehending a number of suspected Persons in your County and sending them into another Colony, for a short time; they have expressed some apprehensions that in their Absence their property maybe exposed to Injury, and their Family's deprived of the Support they would otherwise derive from it. I therefore beg leave to acquaint you, that a Temporary Restraint of

90. A committee of the New York Legislature was ordered to investigate conditions in Kings County, to seize all arms from the disaffected, arrest them, remove or destroy their grain, and, if necessary, lay waste to the whole country. Greene was to furnish the needed military assistance.

their persons, is all that is intended by the present Measure; and that it would give me much pain, if it should be construed to extend to any depredation of property; that Matter resting intirely within the Jurisdiction of the Civil Authority of the Province. Until therefore some Orders are received from them to that Effect, I shall be happy in believing, you will exert your whole Power and Influence, to prevent the Mischief which these Gentlemen seem to apprehend. I am, etc.

### **To THE NEW YORK LEGISLATURE**

Head Quarters, New York, August 12, 1776.

Gentn.: As the time is certainly near at hand, and may be hourly expected, which is to decide the fate of this City and the Issue of this Campaign; I thought it highly improper, that persons of suspected Characters should remain in places, where their opportunities of doing Mischief were much greater, than in the Enemies Camp. I therefore have Caused a number of them to be apprehended and removed to some distance; there to remain until this Crisis is passed. Having formerly mentioned this Subject to your Honble. Body, I would not again trouble them in a business, which former Connections, Obligations, and Interests must make very unpleasant, and which, I apprehend, must have been in danger of failing in the execution, unless done with all possible

Secrecy and dispatch. I postponed this most disagreeable duty till the last moment; but the Claims of the Army upon me, an application from a number of well affected Inhabitants, concurring with my own Opinion, obliged me to enter upon it while time and Circumstances would admit. I have ordered a very strict attention to be paid to the Necessities of the Gentlemen apprehended and to their comfortable accomodations in every respect, both here and at the Places of their Destination. I have also wrote to the Committee of Queens County, that this step is not to be construed as making

their property liable to any Injury or appropriation, unless they should receive directions from your Honble. Body, to whom I have referred them on this Subject; being resolved in all cases, where the most absolute necessity does not require it, to confine myself wholly to that Line, which shall exclude every Idea of interfering with the Authority of the State.

Some of these Gentlemen have expressed doubts and raised difficulties, from Engagements they lay under to your Honorable Body, or some Committees; they do not appear to me to deserve much attention, as they cannot, with any propriety, be charged with a breach of any Parole under their present Circumstances; but I beg leave to Submit to your Consideration the propriety of removing the pretence. I am, etc.

#### **To THE NEW JERSEY LEGISLATURE**

Head Quarters, August 16, 1776.

Gentn.: I am informed, that in Consequence of my Letter acquainting you that a number of Persons deemed unfriendly to the Interests of America, were suspected of holding a Correspondence with the Enemy from Shrewsbury and its Neighbourhood; Mr. Isaac Low late of this City has been apprehended, and is now detained under some kind of Confinement.

Since that time, I have received Satisfaction with respect to this Gentleman, who I find has also entered into a Contract with the Congress for the Supply of a great quantity of European Goods; I should therefore be glad that any restraint laid upon him, merely upon my Representation, might be removed, and he restored to his former Liberty on such Terms and Conditions, as you may think proper, if any are necessary. I am etc.

#### **To GOVERNOR JONATHAN TRUMBULL**

Head Quarters, New York, August 16, 1776.

Sir: I have been obliged to trouble you with some more disaffected persons, whose Residence here was dangerous to the American Interest; I trust I have now done with them, at least for the present,

and hope you will excuse the disagreeable Necessity I have been under, of Soliciting your care and attention to provide for them and dispose of them. As the Case of these differs in no respect from that of those before sent, I presume they will be put under the same Regulations. I am etc.

To FREDERICK JAY

Head Quarters, New York, August 16, 1776.

Sir: In Consequence of my Orders, the undermentioned Persons have been apprehended and are now under a guard at New-Rochelle or its Neighbourhood. As the sending a Guard, thro' to Govt. Trumbull with them, would be attended with much Inconvenience to the Public and cannot be agreeable to the Gentlemen, Upon their giving you their Word and Honor to proceed to Lebanon to Governor Trumbull, I am Satisfied to permit them to go without any other Escort, than that of the Officer who will deliver you this. I must beg the favor of

you to take the Management of this Business and as soon as it is put upon a proper footing, dismiss the Guard now there. I am etc.

Col. Philips.<sup>22</sup>

James Jauncey and his two Sons.

Joseph Bull.

Isaac Corsa.

John Rodgers.

Ware Branson.

**To THE NEW YORK LEGISLATURE**



Head Quarters, New York, August 17, 1776.

Gentn.: When I consider that the City of New York, will in all human probability very soon be the Scene of a bloody Conflict; I cannot but view the great Numbers of Women, Children and infirm Persons remaining in it, with the most melancholy concern. When the Men of War passed up, the River, the Shrieks and Cries of these poor Creatures, running every way with their Children, was truly distressing and I fear will have an unhappy effect, on the Ears and Minds of our young and inexperienced Soldiery. Can no Method be devised for their removal? Many doubtless are of Ability to move themselves; but there are others in a different Situation. Some Provision for them afterwards, would also be a Necessary consideration. It would relieve me from great anxiety, if your Honble. Body would Immediately deliberate upon it and form and execute some plan for their removal and relief; In which I will co-operate and assist to the utmost of my Power. In the mean

22. Frederick(?) Philipse.

time I have thought it proper, to recommend to persons under the above description, to convey themselves without delay to some Place of Safety, with their most Valuable effects.<sup>30</sup> I have the Honor &c.

## **To THE NEW YORK LEGISLATURE**

New York, August 18, 1776.

Gentn.: I have been honored with your Letter of the 17th., with the Resolution of your Honorable Body, for obstructing the Channel betwixt the grand Battery and Nutten Island. Having gone into a Considerable Expence for stopping that of the North River, and such as I am not Certain I shall be justified in, and the obstructions there being far from Compleat, it will not be in my power to engage in the Business you propose, or undertake to Advance any part of the Money, which will be necessarily expended in the Execution. At the same time, give me leave to Assure you, Gentlemen, that I shall most readily afford you such Assistance, as may be derived from the Labour of the

Troops here and that can be spared from other service to facilitate the design; which will be of great Importance, if it can be executed.

I have been also honored with your favor and Resolution of the same date, and am exceedingly obliged by the ready attention you have paid to my Recommendation, for the removal of the Women and Children and Infirm Persons from the City.

30. Conformably to this suggestion a committee was appointed by the New York Legislature to remove such persons as it should think proper and to afford the necessary assistance and support to the poorer citizens. The committee of safety of the State was requested to lend its aid.

I have the honor etc.

**To GOVERNOR JONATHAN TRUMBULL**

New York, August 18, 1776.

Sir: I have been duly honored with your favor of the 13th. Instant; and, at the same time, that I think you and your honorable Council of Safety highly deserving of the thanks of the States, for the Measures you have adopted, in order to give the most early and Speedy Succour to this Army; give me leave to return you mine in a particular Manner. When the whole of the Reinforcements do arrive, I flatter my self we shall be competent to every exigency; and, with the Smiles of Providence upon our Arms and Vigorous Exertions, we shall baffle the designs of our Inveterate Foes, formidable as they are. Our Situation was truly Alarming, a little while Since; but, by the kind Interpositions and Aid of our Friends, is much bettered.

You may rest Assured, Sir, that due Consideration shall be had to the Several Militia Regiments, that have come, and are Marching to our Assistance, and that they shall be dismissed as soon as Circumstances will admit of it, I trust, as long as there is Occasion for their Services, that the same Spirit and Commendable Zeal, which Induced them to come, will

Influence their Continuance. I sincerely wish, it was in my power to ascertain the particular Period when they would be needed, that they might not be detained one unnecessary Moment from their Homes and Common pursuits; But, as this cannot be done; as the Approaching Contest and Trial between the two Armies will, most unquestionably, produce events of the utmost Importance to the States; As the Issue, if favorable, will put us on such a footing, as to bid defiance to the utmost Malice of the British Nation and those in Alliance with her; I have not a doubt, but they will most readily Consent to stay, and chearfully forego every present and Temporary Inconvenience, so long as they are Necessary. I am happy Capt. Van Buren<sup>47</sup> has Succeeded so well in the Business he was upon, It being of great Consequence for us to fit out and maintain our Vessels on the Lake. On the Night of the 16th., Two of our fire Vessels Attempted to burn the Ships of War up the River. One of these Boarded the Phoenix of 44 Guns, and was Grappled with her for some Minutes; but unluckily she cleared herself. The only damage the Enemy sustained, was the destruction of one Tender. It is agreed on all hands, that our People, engaged in this affair, behaved with great Resolution and Intrepidity; one of the Captains, Thomas, It is to be feared, Perished in the attempt, or in making his Escape by Swimming, as he has not been heard of; His Bravery Intitled him to a better fate. Tho' his enterprize did not succeed to our Wishes, I incline to think it alarmed the Enemy

47. Capt. Abraham Van Buren, of the Albany militia.

greatly. For this morning the Phoenix and Rose, with their two remaining Tenders, taking Advantage of a brisk and prosperous Gale, with a favorable tide, Quitted their Stations, and have returned and joined the rest of the Fleet.

As they Passed our Several Batteries, they were fired upon, but without any damage that I could perceive.<sup>48</sup> The whole of the British forces in America, except those employed in Canada are now here, Clinton's arrival being followed the last week by that of Lord Dunmore, who now forms a part of the Army we are to oppose. his coming has not added but little to their Strength. I have the Honor to be &c.

## To THE NEW YORK LEGISLATURE

Head Quarters, New York, August 23, 1776.

Gentn.: I am favored with yours of the 22d, acquainting me with a report now Circulating, “that if the American Army should be obliged to retreat from this City, any Individual may set it on fire.”<sup>91</sup>

I can Assure you Gentlemen, this Report is not founded upon the least Authority from me; on the Contrary, I am so Sensible of the Value of such a City and the Consequences of its destruction, to many worthy Citizens and their Families, that nothing but the last Necessity and that such as should justify me to the whole World, would induce me to give orders for

48. The British ships sustained a good deal of injury in passing the upper batteries near Fort Washington and the Harlem River. General Heath's letter (August 18) reported that the *Phænix* was three times hulled by the shot from Mount Washington and one of the tenders once and that the *Rose* was hulled once by a shot from Burdetts Ferry on the opposite side of river. The *Phænix* and *Rose* had been sounding the river as far up as the Highlands. The tender, burned by one of the fire ships, was beached by the British the next day. A 6-pound cannon, 3 smaller ones, and 10 swivels were recovered from her by the Americans. Heath's letter is in the *Washington Papers*.

91. “The Convention of this State have received Information from one of the Deputies of the City and County of New York of a Report prevailing amongst the Army that if the fortune of War should oblige our Troops to abandon that City, it should be immediately burnt by the retreating Soldiery, and that Any Man is authorized to set it on fire.

“The Convention will chearfully submit to the fatal necessity of destroying that Valuable City whenever your Excellency shall deem it essential to the Safety of this State or the general Interest of America. Yet the Duty which they owe to their Constituents obliges them to take every possible Precaution that Twenty thousand Inhabitants may not be reduced to Misery by the wanton Act of an Individual.

“They therefore entreat the favor of your Excellency to take such Measures in preventing the evil Tendency of such a Report as you shall deem most Expedient.”— *New York Legislature to Washington*, Aug. 22, 1776. This letter is in the *Washington Papers*.

that purpose.

The unwillingness shewn by many families to remove, notwithstanding your and my Recommendation, may perhaps have led some persons to propogate the Report, with honest and Innocent intentions; but as your Letter first informed me of it, I cannot pretend to say by whom or what purpose it has been done.

As my Views with regard to the Removal of the Women and Children, have happily coincided with your Sentiments and a Committee appointed to Carry them into execution; I submit it to your judgment, whether it would not be proper for the Committee to meet immediately in this City, and give Notice of their Attendance on this Business. There are many who anxiously wish to remove but have not the Means. I am etc.

## **To GOVERNOR JONATHAN TRUMBULL**

New York, August 24, 1776.

Sir: On thursday last the Enemy landed a body of Troops, supposed to Amount (from the best Accounts I have been able to obtain) to Eight or Nine Thousand Men at Gravesend Bay on Long Island, Ten Miles distance from our Works, (on the Island) and immediately marched thro' the Level and open Lands to

Flat Bush, where they are now incamped:—They are distant about three Miles from our Lines, and have Woods and broken Ground to pass (which we have lined), before they can get to them; some Skirmishing has happened between their Advanced parties and ours, in which we have always obtained an Advantage; what the real Designs of the Enemy are, I am not yet able to determine. My Opinion of the Matter is, that they mean to attack our Works on the Island, and this City, at

the same time, and that the Troops at Flat Bush are waiting in those Plains, till the Wind and tide (which have not yet served together) will favor the Movement of the Shipping to this place; Others think they will bend their principal Force against our Lines on the Island, which if carried will greatly facilitate their designs upon this City. This also being very probable, I have thrown what force I can over, without leaving myself too much exposed here; for our whole Numbers, if the Intelligence we get from Deserters &c. be true, falls short of that of the Enemy, consequently the defence of our own Works, and the approaches to them, is all we can aim at. This then in a Manner leaves the whole Island in possession of the Enemy, and of Course, of the Supplies it is capable of affording them. Under these Circumstances, would it be practicable for your Government to throw a Body of about one thousand or more Men across the Sound, to harrass the Enemy in their rear or upon their Flanks? This would annoy them exceedingly, at the same time that a Valuable end, to wit, that of preventing their parties securing the Stocks of Cattle &c. would

be answered by it. The Cattle to be removed or killed. The knowledge I have of the extraordinary Exertions of your State, upon all occasions, does not permit me to require this (not knowing how far it is practicable); I only offer it therefore, as a Matter for your Consideration and of great Public Utility, if it can be accomplished. The Enemy, if my Intelligence from Staten Island be true, are at this time rather distressed on Account of Provisions; if then we can deprive them of what this Island affords, much good will follow from it.

The foreigners are yet upon Staten Island.<sup>96</sup> The British Troops are upon Long Island and on Ship Board. With my great respect and Esteem, I remain etc.

## **To THE NEW YORK LEGISLATURE**

New York, August 30, 776.

Sir: Your favor of this date is just come to hand. Circumstanced as this Army was, in respect to Situation, Strength, &c, it was the unanimous advice of a Council of General Officers, to give up Long Island; and not, by dividing our force, be unable to resist the Enemy in any one point of

attack. This reason, added to some others, particularly the fear of having our Communication cut off from the Main, (of which there seemed to be no small probability), and the extreme fatigue our Troops were laid

96. This was an error, as a part of the Germans, Colonel Donop's corps of chasseurs and Hessian grenadiers, were landed on the 22d. Lieutenant General von Heister, commander in chief of the Hessian forces in America, with two brigades of Hessians, joined the army on Long Island on the 25th.— *Ford*.

under, in guarding such extensive Lines, without proper shelter from the Weather, induced the above Resolution.

It is the most intricate thing in the World, Sir, to know in what Manner to conduct one's self with respect to the Militia; if you do not begin, many days before they are wanted to raise them, you cannot have them in time: if you do, they get tired and return; besides being under but very little order or Government whilst in Service. However, if the Enemy have a design of serving of us at this Place, as we apprehend they meant to do on Long Island: It might not be improper to have a Body in readiness, to prevent or retard a landing of them, on the East of Harlem River, if need be. In haste, and not a little fatigued, I remain, etc.

## **To THE NEW YORK LEGISLATURE**

New York, September 1, 1776.

Sir: I was yesterday honored with your favor of that date, and should have Answered it by the Return of the Person who brought it; had I not been engaged then in a Multiplicity of business, which occasioned me to forget it, till he was gone.

In Respect to the Cattle on this Island, I shall desire the Commissary to purchase as many of them from the

Inhabitants, as he can conveniently and will afford every Assistance the Situation of Affairs will admit of, to have the remainder secured; but as to those on Long Island, It is impossible for me to take any Measures, or give any Assistance to prevent their falling into the Enemys hands. I am persuaded the Number of Rangers you mention, were they to exert themselves, might be of Service and annoy the foraging Parties of the Enemy not a little. But Sir, I cannot spare any Men for that purpose. Tho' our Force is Called in from the out Posts and Collected on this Island, yet it will not be more than Competent to the defence of the several Lines necessary to be maintained; nor is it perhaps by any means so great as common estimation and report make it.

I am extremely obliged by your Opinion, on the defencible State of the Grounds above King's Bridge, tho' they had not escaped my Observation. Their Importance I am fully sensible of; and as far as the Critical situation of things will allow, their defence shall be attended to, to prevent if possible the Enemy from possessing them. I have the honor etc.

P.S. As the Posts at Kings Bridge are of such great Importance, I think it will be well and extremely necessary to be favored with your friendly exertions, in affording every Aid in your power for their defence. Cannot some more Militia be prevailed on to give their Assistance and in whom you can confide. I will

not enlarge, being fully assured you will do all you can.

## **To THE COMMITTEE OF SAFETY OF NEW YORK**

Head Quarters, New York, September 6, 1776.

Sir: I have now before me your Letter of the 4th Inst., inclosing the report against Ordering out any more of the Militia from the Counties of Orange, Dutchess, Westchester or Ulster. The reasons alledged by the Committee, to whom this matter was referred, are intirely satisfactory to me, and therefore I do not expect a Compliance with that part of my Letter which respects this Matter. I have the Honor to be &ca.



## To GOVERNOR JONATHAN TRUMBULL

New York, September 6, 1776.

Sir: I have been honored with your favor of the 31st Ult. and am extremely obliged by the Measures you are taking, in consequence of my recommendation Letter. The exertions of Connecticut upon this, as well as upon every other occasion, do them great honor and I hope will be attended with successful and happy Consequences. In respect to the mode of Conduct, to be pursued by the Troops, that go over to the Island, I cannot lay down any Certain rule, it must be formed and governed by

Circumstances and the Direction of those who Command them.

I should have done myself the honor of transmitting you an Account of the Engagement between a detachment of our Troops and the Enemy on long Island on the 27th, and of our Retreat from thence, before now, had it not been for the Multiplicity of Business I have been involved in ever since; and, being still engaged, I cannot enter upon a Minute and particular detail of the affair; I shall only add, that we lost, in killed, wounded and prisoners, from 700 to 1,000 Men. Among the Prisoners are Genl. Sullivan and Lord Stirling. The Inclosed list will shew you the names of many of the officers that are Prisoners; The Action was chiefly with the Troops from Jersey, Pennsylvania, the lower Counties, and Maryland, and Col. Huntingdon's Regt.; they suffered greatly, being attacked and overpowered by Numbers of the Enemy greatly superior to them. The Enemy's loss we have not been able to ascertain; but we have reason to believe it was considerable, as the Engagement was Warm and Conducted with great Resolution and bravery on the part of our Troops. During the Engagement, a deep Column of the Enemy descended from the Woods and attempted an Impression upon our Lines, but retreated immediately on the Discharge of a Cannon and part of the Musquetry from the line nearest to them. As the Main body of the Enemy had Encamped not far from our Lines, and I had reason to believe they intended to force us from them by regular Approaches, which the Nature of the Ground favored extremely,

and at the same time meant, by the Ships of War, to cut off the Communication between the City and the Island, and by that means keep our Men divided and unable to oppose them any where; by the advice of the General Officers, on the night of the 29th, I withdrew our Troops from thence without any loss of Men and but little Baggage. I am &c.

**To THE NEW YORK LEGISLATURE**

New York, September 8, 1776.

Sir: I have just received the Resolve of your Convention, respecting the removal of the Bells belonging to the different Churches and Public Edifices in this City, to New Ark in the Province of New Jersey. The Measure I highly approve of, and shall accordingly have it Carried into Execution.

I have lately been Conversing with Genl Clinton, concerning the Defence of the Forts in the Highlands, who agrees with me in Sentiment, that the force already there is by no means Sufficient; I should therefore conceive it would be greatly in advancement of the Service, if you would cause a Reinforcement of Militia, amounting to about 600 Men, to be sent there from the Counties of Ulster and Orange or any other that may be most proper and Convenient. They may be usefully and importantly employed, as well in defence of the Highlands, in case they should be attacked, as in erecting new Works and Fortifications, by

which they may be rendered more Secure. I am, etc.

**To THE NEW YORK LEGISLATURE**

New York, September 8, 1776.

Sir: I wrote you this Morning by your Express; but forgot to mention a Matter of Consequence. It being determined to remove our Sick to Orange Town, we shall want four Large Albany Sloops for that Purpose; The fatigue of traveling that distance by land, would not only be more than the patients could bear, but we have full employ for our Waggons in transporting Baggage, Tents &c.

for the Troops from hence to our out Posts; I must therefore beg the favor of your honorable Body to procure the above number of Vessels and send them down with as much dispatch as possible to this City. I am etc.

P.S. I shall be glad to know by return of the Express, when I may probably expect the Sloops down, There are several now on the lower parts of the River with Boards; perhaps you might engage them to come this way, which would save time.

**To GOVERNOR JONATHAN TRUMBULL**

Head Quarters, New York, September 9, 1776.

Sir: I have the honor of your favor of the 5th Instant, and am sorry to say that, from the best information we have been able to obtain, the people on Long Island have, since our evacuation, gone generally over to the Enemy, and made such Concessions as have been required—some through compulsion I suppose, but more from Inclination. As a diversion upon the Island has been impracticable under these circumstances, I think you have done well in assisting the removal of the persons and Effects of our Friends from thence.

I observe, with great pleasure, that you have ordered the remaining Regiments of Militia that can be spared from the immediate defence of the Sea Coast, to march towards New York with all expedition. I cannot sufficiently express my thanks, not only for your constant ready compliance with every request of mine, but for your own strenuous exertions and prudent forecast in ordering matters so, that your force has generally been collected and put in motion as soon as It has been demanded.

With respect to the Militia, both Horse and Foot, I am of opinion that they will render us more service by rendezvousing at different places along the Sound, in Westchester County and thereabouts, than by coming directly to this City. It will not only give the Enemy, who are extending their Encampment up the Island, an Idea of our Force along the Coast, but If they

should attempt a landing above King's Bridge, they will be in readiness to Join our force about that place. The Horse particularly, whose rapid motion enables them to be in a short time at any point of Attack. Besides, the difficulty of procuring for age upon this Island for any number of Horses, is an objection to their being stationed here. I fear the Militia, by leaving their Homes so suddenly, and in a manner unprepared for a long absence, have sustained some Injury. To this cause I must impute, in a great measure, their impatience to return, and the diminution of their number at this time to about 2000. Their want of discipline, the Indulgences they claim and have been allowed, their unwillingness, I may add refusal, to submit to that regularity and order essential in every Army, Infecting the rest of our Troops more or less, have been of pernicious tendency, and occasioned a good deal of confusion and disorder. But, Sir, these things are not peculiar to those from any one State; they are common to all Militia, and what must be generally expected: For men who have been free, and never subject to restraint or any kind of control, cannot be taught the necessity, or be brought to see the expediency, of strict discipline in a day.

I highly approve of your plan and proposition for raising such a naval force as will be sufficient to clear the Sound of the Enemy's Ships of War. If Admiral Hopkins will Join you, I should suppose It not only practicable, but a matter of certainty; and If It can be effected, many valuable and salutary

consequences must result from It. As to draughting seamen from the Continental Regiments, It cannot be done, as their Numbers have been reduced so low already by taking men from them for the Gallies, Boats, and other purposes, that some of them have hardly any thing left but the name; besides, I must depend chiefly upon them for a successful opposition to the Enemy. If It can be done out of the Militia, I shall not have the least objection, and heartily wish the Enterprise, whenever attempted, may be attended with all possible success. Secrecy and dispatch will be the most likely to give It a happy Issue. The Enemy's Ships can receive no reinforcements but such as go round Long Island. Our Works at Hell Gate preventing their sending Ships that way, they are sensible of their importance, and yesterday opened Two Three-Gun Batteries to effect their destruction, but as yet have not materially damaged them; and they must be maintained If possible. I have, &c.

P.S. The nearer the Militia and Horse keep on the Sound towards King's Bridge, the better, as they will be ready to oppose any Landing of the Enemy, and also to receive orders for reinforcing any posts on this side, in case of necessity.

**To THE NEW YORK LEGISLATURE**

Head Quarters, New York, September 12, 1776.

Sir: I yesterday received the favor of your Letter of the 9th.

with its several inclosures, and am extremely happy that your Honble. Body had anticipated my recommendation, by resolving on an augmentation of Six hundred Men to the Garrisons in the Highlands; The Importance of those Posts demands the utmost attention and every exertion to maintain them.

The Vessels for the removal of the Sick are not yet arrived; Their present Situation gives me great anxiety, as the Wind is now favorable, I would fain hope that a Sufficient number will come down to day, to take in the whole; If they do not, my distress will be much increased.

Genl Clinton in a Letter of the 8th., transmitted me a list of Artillery and Ordnance Stores wanted at Forts Montgomery and Constitution, which included the Several Articles you have determined to procure, except those mentioned below. I directed that they should be sent up, but as the Situation of our affairs at this time, may not perhaps admit of it; I think it will be prudent for Mr. Schenck<sup>58</sup> whom you have appointed an Agent in this Instance, to get all he can. Should he be able to obtain the Supply you have voted to be necessary, and Genl Clinton's demand be Complied with also, no damage will be done, Our Stores will not be too large. I have the Honor to be etc.

58. John Schenck, jr., of Poughkeepsie, N.Y.

**To GOVERNOR NICHOLAS COOKE**

Head Quarters, Colo. Morris's House, September 17, 1776.

Sir: I recd the honor of your favor of the 6th. Inst., by Messrs. Collins, Babcock, and Stanton,<sup>71</sup> and should have acknowledged it before now, had I not been prevented by the peculiar Situation of our Affairs.

I communicated my Sentiments to those Gentlemen, upon the Subject of your Letter and the several propositions that were before us; who, I doubt not, will make a full and due Report of the same to you and your Honble. Assembly: however, I shall take the liberty of adding, that the divided State of our Army, which, when collected in one body, is inferior to that of the Enemy—their having landed almost the whole of their force on Long Island, and formed a plan for cutting off all Communication between that and the City of New York, which we had but too good reason to believe practicable and easy to Effect with their Ships of War, made it necessary and prudent to withdraw our Troops from the former, that our chance of resistance and opposition might be more probable and likely to be attended with a happy Issue.

I feel myself much concerned on Account of your Apprehensions for the Town of New Port and the Island of Rhode Island; and should esteem myself peculiarly happy, were it in my Power to afford means for their Security and that of the State in General, or to point out such Measures as would be effectual for that Purpose. But, Circumstanced as I am, it is not Possible

71. John Collins, Joshua Babcock, and Joseph Stanton, a committee of the Rhode Island Assembly appointed to confer with Washington.

for me to grant any Assistance; nor can I, with propriety, undertake to prescribe the mode, which will best promote their defence. This must depend on such a Variety of Circumstances, that I shou'd suppose you and the Assembly, who are in the State, will be much more Competent to the task; than what I, or any person out of it, can be; and, therefore, I can only recommend, that you will pursue such Steps as you, in your Judgment, shall think most conducive to that end; observing that it appears to me a Matter of extreme difficulty (if Practicable), to prevent the Enemy's Ships doing

damage to every Island accessible to them, unless the passes, between them and the Main, are so Narrow, as to oblige them to come very near such Batteries, as may be erected for their Annoyance, on commanding Ground.

I cannot sufficiently express my thanks, for the readiness you and your Assembly manifested in ordering Troops &c. to Long Island, on hearing of my request to Govr. Trumbull upon that Subject. At the time that I made it, I conceived the plan of much Importance, and that many Valuable and Salutory Consequences might have resulted from it; but as things have undergone a Material Change since, it may not be improper to consider and be Satisfied of some facts, which ought to be clearly known, previous to any Attempt to carry it into Execution and on which the Success of it will greatly depend: Such, as an intire Conviction of the friendly disposition of the Inhabitants of the Island; the Number that would join the Troops that might be sent

over; The lengths they would go; The Support they would and can give and whether a retreat from thence could be safely effected in case it should be necessary. These Matters and others which a more Minute Consideration of the Plan, will present to your View, should be well weighed and digested and which I thought it my duty to mention, especially as the scheme had originated with me. My Anxiety and Concern for the Inhabitants at the East end of Long Island, who have been represented always as friendly and well attached to the cause of the States, prompt me to wish them every Assistance; but if the efforts you could make in conjunction with Govt. Trumbull, would not promise almost a Certainty of Success, perhaps they might tend to aggravate their Misfortunes. The Committee stated sundry propositions respecting this Expedition; such as if any thing was attempted, where a stand should be made? This must be left to the discretion of those who Command, nor can I spare an Officer for that purpose nor recommend one. what Number of Men should be sent and what proportion from the Massachusetts? The Number necessary will depend upon the force they will have to oppose and the Assistance they would derive from the Islanders. The proportion from the Massachusetts on the Will of the Legislature or Voluntary Engagement of the People, in the Service. What Artillery they should have? I am of Opinion the Artillery would be Subject to Loss without any great advantage resulting from it. They also asked whether any frigates

should be sent &c.? As the Enemy have now the free and intire Command of the Sound, and many Ships of War in it, they will be much

more liable to be taken, than they would have been some time ago and when it was proposed by Govt. Trumbull to make an attempt upon the Ships above Hell Gate; In this Instance stance however I do not conceive myself at liberty to say any thing peremptory one way or other, having no power over the Frigates.

I am sensible of the force of your Observation, that the Common Cause might be benefited by the several States receiving early and Authentic Intelligence of every material occurrence. permit me at the same time to assure you, that I often regret my Incapacity in this Instance and that the neglect does not arise from want of Inclination or thro' Inattention; but from the variety of important Matters, that are always pressing upon and which daily surround me. Before I conclude, I shall take this Opportunity to inform you, that having received certain Information that the Enemy's plan was to pass from Long Island and land in our rear with their Army; to cut off all Communication with the Country and for which they were making every possible disposition; a Council of General Officers determined last Week, on a Removal of the Army from the City, in order to prevent the fatal Consequences which must inevitably ensue, if they could have executed their Scheme: resolving at the same time, that every appearance of defence should be kept up, till our Sick, Ordnance and Stores could be removed. This was set about with the greatest Industry and as to the Sick was compleatly effected, but on Sunday Morning before we had accomplished the removal of all our Cannon,

Provision and Baggage \*\*\*.<sup>72</sup> This Scandalous Conduct occasioned a loss of several Tents and other Baggage which would have been easily secured. The remainder of the Troops that were in the City got out, and the Retreat of the whole was effected with the loss of but very few Men, not more than three or four that I have heard of were made Prisoners, and only one or two killed.

72. The omitted portion is practically a duplication of the information in Washington's letter to Congress of the panic at Kips Bay. (See Washington's letter to Congress, Sept. 16, 1776, *ante*.)



I am now Encamped on the Heights above mentioned which are so well Calculated for defence, that I should hope, if the Enemy make an attack and our Men will behave with tolerable Resolution, they must meet with a Repulse, if not a total defeat. They advanced in sight yesterday in several large Bodies, but attempted nothing of a General Nature; Tho' in the forenoon there were some smart Skirmishes between some of their parties and detachments sent out by me; In which I have the pleasure to inform you our Men behaved with bravery and Intrepidity, putting them to flight when in open Ground and forcing them from Posts they had seized, two or three times. From some of their Wounded Men which fell into our hands, the appearance of Blood in every place where they made their Stand and on the Fences as they passed, we have reason to believe they had a good many Killed and Wounded; tho' they did not leave many on the ground. In number our loss was very inconsiderable, but in the fall of Lieut. Col Knowlton,<sup>73</sup> I consider it as great, being a brave and good Officer, and it may be increased by the Death of Major Leitch<sup>74</sup> of the Virginia Regiment, who unfortunately received three Balls thro' his side. Having given you a Summary Account of the Situation of our affairs and in such Manner as Circumstances will admit of; I have only to add, that I have the honor to be &c.

P.S. The Committee have expressed their apprehensions of being

73. Lieut. Col. Thomas Knowlton, of the Twentieth Continental Infantry.

74. Maj. Andrew Leitch, of the Third Virginia Regiment. He died of his wounds Oct. 1, 1776.

obliged to abandon the Island of Rhode Island and New Port, and requested my opinion. at present I can see no Cause for it, and the propriety of the Measure must depend upon Circumstances; But I should suppose they ought to be very pressing and the Necessity great, before they ought to be given up, most certainly no imaginary Ills or Necessity should lead to such a Measure. At this time the danger can only be Ideal and if the Enemy persevere in their Plans, and our Men behave as they should do, I am persuaded they will not have an opportunity to employ their Attention else where this Campaign.

## To THE MASSACHUSETTS LEGISLATURE

Head Quarters, Colo. Roger Morris's House, 10 Miles from New York, September 19, 1776.

Gentn.: I was honored the Night before last, with your favor of the 13th. Inst.; and at the same time that I conceive your anxiety to have been great, by reason of the vague and uncertain Accts. you received respecting the Attack on Long Island, give me leave to assure you that the Situation of our Affairs and the Important concerns which have surrounded me, and which are daily pressing on me, have prevented me, from transmitting in many Instances, the Intelligence I otherwise should have conveyed.

In respect to the Attack and retreat from long Island, the Public papers will furnish you with Accounts nearly true. I

shall only add, that in the former we lost about 800 Men; more than three fourths of which were taken Prisoners. This Misfortune happened in great Measure, by two Detachments of our people, who were posted in two Roads leading thro' a Wood, in order to intercept the Enemy in their March, suffering a Surprise and making a precipitate retreat; which enabled the Enemy to lead a great part of their force against the Troops Commanded by Lord Stirling which formed a third detachment, who behaved with great Bravery and Resolution, charging the Enemy, and maintaining their Posts from about Seven or Eight O'Clock in the Morning, 'till two in the afternoon; When they were Obligated to Attempt a retreat, being surrounded and overpowred by Numbers on all Sides, and in which many of them were taken, one Battalion, Smallwoods of Maryland, lost 259 Men and the general damage fell upon the Regiments from Pennsylvania Delaware and Maryland and Col Huntingdon's of Connecticut. As to the Retreat from the Island, it was effected without loss of Men and with but very little Baggage; a few heavy Cannon were left, not being Movable, on Account of the Grounds being soft and miry, thro' the Rains that had fallen. The Enemy's loss, in killed we could never ascertain, but have many reasons to believe that it was pretty considerable, able, and exceeded ours a good deal. The Retreat from thence was Absolutely Necessary, The Enemy having landed the Main body of their Army there to attack us in front, while their Ships of War were to cut

off the Communication with the City, from whence resources of Men, Provisions &ca. were to be drawn.

Having made this Retreat, and long after, we discovered by their Movements and the Information we reed from deserters and others, that they declined attacking our Lines in the City and were forming a Plan to get in our Rear with their land Army, by crossing the Sound above us, and thereby cut off all intercourse course with the Country and every Necessary Supply. The Ships of War were to co-operate, Possess the North River and prevent Succour from the Jerseys &c. This Plan appearing probable and but too practicable in its execution; it became Necessary to guard against the fatal Consequences that must follow, if their Scheme was effected, for which purpose I caused a removal of a Part of our Stores, Troops &c from the City; and a Council of General Officers determined on thursday last, that it must be intirely abandoned, holding up however every Shew and appearance of defence, till our Sick and all our Stores could be brought away. The Evacuation being resolved on, every exertion in our power was made, to baffle their design and effect our own. The Sick were Numerous and an object of great Importance, happily we got them away; but before we could bring off all our Stores, on Sunday Morning Six or Seven Ships of War, which had gone up the East River some few days before, began a most severe and heavy Cannonade. \*\*\*<sup>90</sup>

90. The omitted portion is a repetition of the account of the Kips Bay affair. (See Washington's letter to Congress, Sept. 16, 1776, *ante*.)

The Retreat was effected with the loss of three or four Men only. We encamped and still are on the Heights of Harlem, which are well calculated for defence against their approaches. on Monday Morning they advanced in Sight in Several large Bodies, but attempted nothing of a General Nature; Tho' there were smart Skirmishes between their advanced parties and some Detachments from our Lines which I sent out; In these our Troops behaved with

great Resolution and Bravery, putting them to flight in open Ground and forcing them from posts they had Seized two or three times. A Serjeant who deserted from them, Says, the Report

was, they had 89 Missing and Wounded, and Eight Killed. in the last Instance his Account is too Small, because our People have buried more than twice as Many. In Number our Loss was very inconsiderable, but in the fall of Lieut Colo. Knowlton of Connecticut, I consider it as great, being a brave and good Officer. Major Leitch who Commanded a detachment from the Virginia Regiment, unfortunately received three Balls thro' his side, he still supports his Spirits and seems as if he would do well. Colo Knowlton was Interred with every honor due to his Merit and that the Situation of things would admit of. Since this affair, nothing has happened. The Enemy, it is said, are bringing forward several Heavy Cannon to force us from the Heights. At the same time that they open their Batteries in front, their Ships of War, Seven or Eight of which are in the North River, are to Cannonade our right Flank. Thus have I run over, in a cursory rough way, an Account of the most material Events from the Battle on Long Island to the present moment. I have not time to study order or Elegance. This however I do not so much mind, and only wish my Narrative was more agreeable. But we must set down things as they are. I hope they will be better: Nothing on my part shall be wanting to bring about the most favorable Events.

I am now to make my most grateful

Acknowledgments to your Honble. Body, for the succour they meant to afford me in the Militia lately Ordered to March; and have only to lament, that they should be so unprovided with Tents and other Camp Necessaries. Our Distresses in these Instances are extremely great, having by no means a Sufficiency for the Troops already here, nor do I know how they can be procured. I am at a loss for the Officers Names who Command this Reinforcement as they are not Mentioned. However, I have wrote by Fessenden, that they should lead the Men on as fast as possible, sending before them, when they get within one or two days March of King's Bridge, an Officer to receive Orders from me, How they are to be disposed of. Instructions given now, might become improper, by the Intervention of a Variety of Circumstances. I have the honor to be &c.

**To GOVERNOR JONATHAN TRUMBULL**

Head Quarters, Heights of Harlem, September 23, 1776.

Sir: Genl Howe, in a Letter received from him yesterday Evening by a Flag, having offered to exchange Brigadier Genl. Lord Stirling for Governor Montfort Brown, and also requested that Govr. Skene may be granted his liberty without delay, assuring me that Mr. Lovell shall be immediately enlarged, on his Arrival from Hallifax and whose exchange for Governor Skene's has been agreed upon; I must take the Liberty of requesting the favor of your

Notice to these two Gentlemen, and that you will provide them with a proper Escort to repair to Head Quarters as soon as they can, with their baggage; that the proposed Exchange for Lord Stirling may be effected, and Genl. Howe's request be Complied with respecting Governor Skene's being returned. The Gentlemen are to consider themselves under parole, till such time as they are sent from Head Qurs. to General Howe.

I must beg your excuse, for not having wrote you of late upon the Situation of our Affairs, and such Events as have cast up in the Military Line. I shall only add, that the Important Concerns which have Commanded my Closest attention, have been the Cause, and, I am fully persuaded, will furnish me with a Sufficient apology.

Of the evacuation of the City of New York, on Sunday Sennight, and the retreat to this Place you will have heard before now, and of the Manner in which it was conducted. I am certain, a minute relation of them, would only increase the uneasiness, which would naturally arise upon hearing the Events; and therefore, as I have not time, I shall not enter upon it. The Enemy by their Movements having unfolded their Plan of Operations, and discovered that they declined making a direct attack upon the Town, and that their designs were to land in our Rear and to cut off all intercourse with the Country; at the same time to prevent any Communication with the Jersey and States, South of the North River, by means of their Ships of War; It

became necessary to adopt such Measures, as seemed best calculated to baffle their schemes and promote the Common Interests. To these ends, a Council of Officers determined the Evacuation of the City absolutely necessary, and I have only to wish, that it had been made in a Way more honorable and with less loss of Baggage; which might have been the case, had the Troops that

remained there, for the defence of the Lines, not betaken themselves to a most precipitate and disgraceful flight, contrary to the exertions of their General officers and every effort in my Power to prevent and form them. Having gone from hence, as soon as the Ships began their Cannonade, and whither I had come the Night before, to the Main Body of our Army, in expectation of an Attack that night or the next Morning; as the parade of the Enemy and the unusual Stir amongst them, strongly Indicated one. The next Morning, several large Columns of them appeared on the Plains, at the distance of about two Miles and a half below us, and some smart Skirmishes ensued between their Advanced parties composed of the 2d. Battallion of Infantry, a Regt. of Royal Highlanders, and three Companies of the Hessian Chauseurs or Rifle Men and the detachments which I sent out to oppose them. Upon this Occasion, our Men behaved with great Spirit and Intrepidity, putting the Enemy to flight and forcing them from their Posts two or three times. Our people buried Sixteen or Eighteen of their dead, as they say; and a Serjeant who has since deserted, reports, they had Eighty Nine Missing and Wounded. Our Loss in Number was inconsiderable, but must

be considered as great, in the fall of Lieut. Colo. Knowlton of your State who Commanded a party of Rangers, composed of Volunteers from the several New England Regiments, and who was a brave and good officer. Every honor was paid to his merit in his Interment, that the Situation of things would admit of. The Enemy have formed a large Encampment in the plains, or rather Heights, below us, extending across, as it were, from the East to the North River; but have attempted nothing as yet of a General nature. We are making every disposition in our power, for defence and I should hope from the Ground we are on, If they make an Attack and our Men behave with tolerable resolution and firmness, that they will meet with a repulse, or, at least, any advantage they gain will be attended with Sorrow and a Considerable Loss. Major Leitch, who led on a detachment of the Virginia Regiment in the affair of Monday, received three Balls thro' one Side; he still retains his Spirits and seems as if he would recover. On friday Night, about Eleven or twelve OClock, a fire broke out in the City of New York, which, burning rapidly till after Sun rise next morning, destroyed a great Number of Houses. By what means it happened we do not know; but the Gentleman who brought the Letter from Genl. Howe last night, and who was one of his Aide De Camps, informed Col. Reed, that several of our Countrymen had been punished with

various deaths on Account of it; some by hanging, others by burning, &c., alledging that they were apprehended when Committing the fact. I have &c.

P.S. I would choose that Governors Brown and Skene should be stopt, when they come within Ten or twelve Miles, and detained till one of the Escort can inform me of their coming, and receive my directions respecting them.

### **To GOVERNOR JONATHAN TRUMBULL**

Harlem Heights, September 26, 1776.

Sir: Your favor of the 20th. Inst. is duly received. The Several Regiments of Militia from Connecticut, lately Commanded by Genl. Wolcot, being reduced to almost nothing; one having returned under twenty and another short of thirty effective Men; they were yesterday discharged. I am full in Opinion with you, that some severe Examples ought to be made of the late deserters; for a Return of their Names, I must refer you to the Several Commanding Officers of the different Regiments. I hope these under Brigadier Saltonstall, may shew a better Spirit.

A proposal for an immediate exchange of Prisoners has been made by General Howe, agreeable to the Resolve of Congress. I am to request a return, as soon as possible, of all those in Connecticut, mentioning their Names and Ranks of all Commissioned Officers, and distinguishing particularly between those of the Army and Navy, as well privates as Officers. It appears to me, their being Marched to some Convenient Post and Coming by Water, will be much the most Convenient; at least it must save expence and will prevent their having a View of the

different Towns and their Situations on the Sea Coasts. your Sentiments on the Subject, together with the return of the Prisoners, as early as possible, will much Oblige me. I am etc.

### **To THE MASSACHUSETTS LEGISLATURE**

Head Quarters, Harlem Heights, September 29, 1776.

Gentn.: Genl. Howe having signified to me, a desire of making a general exchange of Prisoners, both Officers and Privates; it becomes necessary to have an exact return of the numbers in our possession.—You will therefore be pleased, to have all the Continental Prisoners of War (belonging to the land Service) in the different Towns in your State, collected and brought together to some convenient place, from whence they may be removed hither when a Cartel is fully settled. When they are collected, you will please to have made out, and transmit to me, an exact return of the names of the Commissioned and Staff Officers, their Ranks and the Corps to which they belong; the names of the Non Commissioned and privates need not be mentioned, their Numbers will be Sufficient. As it will be more convenient to send them by Water than by land, which may always be safely effected, by means of a Flag; I think you had better order the Prisoners to some place contiguous to a Port, there to remain till you hear further from me. As I apprehend the Number of Prisoners in the State of New hampshire

to be too small to make up a freight for a Vessel; I have directed, if that should be the Case, that they would be sent to your State, that they may come forward with your Prisoners. you will be pleased to forward the Inclosed to Lieut. Colo Campbell of the 71st Regt. I am not certain where he is stationed, but think it is at Reading. I have the Honor to be etc.

P.S. Be pleased also to make a return of the Prisoners be longing to the British Navy, with the names and Ranks of the Officers. Inclosed you have a Letter from Capt Campbell<sup>44</sup> of the 71st Regt. to me; as he seems to acknowledge his Error and promises a more circumspect behaviour in future, I could wish you would consider his Case, and if you think proper admit him to his parole again.<sup>45</sup>

44. Capt. Patrick(?) Campbell.

45. Practically the same letter was sent to the Legislature of New Hampshire.

**To DEPUTY GOVERNOR WILLIAM BRADFORD<sup>46</sup>**



Head Quarters, Heights of Harlem, September 29, 1776.

Sir: I have been honored with your two favors of the 14th and 23d Inst.; and am to return you my thanks for the Measures you have taken, to forward the two Continental Battalions,

46. Of Rhode Island.

from your State. In respect to the Exchange of the Persons you mention, I apprehend it Cannot be effected, till a general one takes place. This I am trying to carry into execution as well with the Naval, as the Land Service; and, therefore, must request the favor of your State, to make out and transmit me a Return, as soon as possible, of all Continental Prisoners in their hands; distinguishing the names and Ranks of the Commissioned and Staff Officers, and the Corps to which they belong, and the Number of non Commissioned and Privates; observing the same Rule in regard to those in the Sea Service. It will be well to have the whole Collected at one or two Convenient places, in order that they may be sent forward, as soon as the Plan is properly digested, of which I shall advise you, as soon as I obtain the Return.

I have wrote to the other Eastern States upon the same Subject; and to me it appears, that the Prisoners with you had better join those in Connecticut, that they may come together. I would recommend your writing to Governor Trumbull, for Information where their Prisoners are to be Assembled, and for his Sentiments in this Instance. It also seems advisable, that they should come by water rather than by land; but of this you will have due Notice, as I mean to Settle upon some regular Mode with the Admiral, and General Howe, against the time I am furnished with the Returns of the States. I have the honor to be, etc.

**To GOVERNOR JONATHAN TRUMBULL**

Head Quarters, Heights of Harlem, September 30, 1776.

Sir: Having received authentic advices from Long Island, that the Enemy are recruiting a great number of Men with much success, and Collecting large Quantities of Stock throughout the Island

for their Support; I have directed Brigadier Genl Clinton forthwith to repair to Fairfield to meet Genl. Lincoln, on his march hither with a part of the Troops lately Voted by the Massachusetts State, to reinforce this Army; in order to concert with him an expedition to the Island, to check and suppress, if possible, a practice so injurious and detrimental to our Cause. These Gentn. will wait on you for your advice in the Matter, if time and the Situation of things will admit of it, and with a view of obtaining such Aid as you and they may judge necessary to facilitate the Enterprize. However, if it should not be in their Power, personally, to attend you, I must take the Liberty of requesting your good offices upon this Occasion, and that you will afford them every Assistance that you conveniently can and they may require, either in Men, Vessels, &c. for carrying their Scheme into execution.

It is absolutely necessary, that the Measures of the Enemy should be effectually counteracted in this Instance, or, in a little time, they will levy no inconsiderable Army of our own People. The influence of their Money and their artifices have already passed the Sound, and several have been detected of late, who had enlisted to serve under their banner and the particular

Command of Major Rogers.<sup>58</sup>

Being in haste, and having the fullest confidence that your favors will not be wanting in this Instance, I have only time to add, that, I have the honor to be &ca.

**To GOVERNOR JONATHAN TRUMBULL**

Head Quarters, Harlem Heights, October 1, 1776.

Sir: I have the Honor of your favor of the 27th Ulto. and Note the Contents. The Row Gallies belonging to your State, together with those the property of the United States, and all other Vessels, on the approach of the Men of War, ran up the North River, under cover of the Battery on Mount Washington, from whence it is now impossible to remove them. As they are now posted, they are serviceable to us, by preventing a Communication with the Ships; and keeping out Row Guards by Night, to give us timely Notice of the approach, or any movements of the Enemy. To take from

them their Crew, would be rendering them entirely useless, and to rob them of their Weapons would dispirit the Men; however if it should be thought advisable, after weighing the above Circumstances to have the Crew ordered to Connecticut, or any of the Arms or other Weapons on board to be sent there your Orders shall be attended to. The situation of the Enemy's Ships is very different at this time, from what it was before the evacuation of New York. we then had the Command of a narrow Pass, communicating

58. Maj. Robert Rogers.

from the Sound to the East River, commonly called Hell Gate; which is now in their possession, two of their Ships came thro' yesterday; one I think a Transport, the other a Frigate mounting 24 Guns.

October 3.

Since the above, I am honored with yours of the 28th, inclosing the Petition from the Gentlemen sent from this State on Parole to Connecticut. They were looked upon as favourers to Govt. Tryon and the British Troops, and were removed, to prevent giving any Intelligence or otherways aiding the Enemy's of our Country. It was intended, that when the Theatre of Action was removed, they might return; but that at present is not the case, nor do I think it prudent they should be permitted to return, during our present Situation; as undoubtedly they may have it in their power, to give Information concerning your State &c. which might be prejudicial to the General good. They particularly mention in their petition, "that they were removed from Long Island into Connecticut, until such time as the Situation and State of Affairs there, should admit of their Return to their respective Families again." You will be pleased to inform them, I agree with you in sentiment, that that Period is not arrived. There is no material difference in our Situation since I last wrote you. the Enemy have nearly Completed their Works from the North to the East River, as the Season is far advanced, we cannot reasonably expect a State of Inactivity; but should they attempt to dislodge us from our present Quarters, I am in hopes to defeat their designs and give a favorable Account to the Public of the Conduct of the Troops under my Command.

I have the honor to be, etc.

**To GOVERNOR WILLIAM LIVINGSTON**

Head Quarters, Harlem Heights, October 5, 1776.

Sir: The Congress having directed me, by a Resolve of the 26th. Sepr., to procure as soon as possible, an Exchange of the Officers and Soldiers taken on Long Island, for the same Number of British Officers and privates, now prisoners in the United States; it becomes necessary, for me to be informed of the Numbers and Ranks of the prisoners in the different States, in order to carry the same into execution. you will therefore oblige me, by having made out and transmitted to me, an exact Return of the Number of Officers in New Jersey, their Ranks, Names and the Corps to which they belong; The numbers of the non Commissioned Officers and privates without their names will be Sufficient. They should also be Collected from the different Places where they are Stationed, and brought together to some convenient place (Brunswick I should think), from whence they may be sent to General Howe when the Cartel is fully settled. I am etc.

**To GOVERNOR PATRICK HENRY**

Head Quarters, Heights of Harlem, October 5, 1776.

Dr. Sir: Your Obliging favor of the 20th Ultimo came duly to hand and demands my best acknowledgments. I congratulate you, Sir, most cordially, upon your appointment to the Government; and, with no less sincerity, on your late recovery. Your Correspondence will confer honor and Satisfaction; and, whenever it is in my power, I shall write to you with pleasure. Our Retreat from Long Island, under the peculiar Circumstances we then laboured, became an Act of prudence and necessity, and the Evacuation of New York was a consequence resulting from the other. Indeed, after we discovered the Enemy, instead of making an Attack upon the City, were endeavouring (by means of their Ships and a Superior land force) either to intercept our retreat, by getting in our rear; or else by landing their *forces*, between our divisions at Kingsbridge and those

in the Town, to separate the one from the other, it became a matter of the last importance to alter the disposition of the Army.

These Measures, however, (Although of the most evident utility) have been productive of some inconveniencies; the Troops having become in some Measure dispirited, by these successive Retreats, and which, I presume, has also been the case among several of our Friends in the Country. In order to recover that Military Ardor, which is of the utmost Moment to an Army; almost immediately on my Arrival at this Place, I formed a design of cutting off some of the Enemy's light Troops, who (encouraged by their Successes) had advanced to the extremity of the High

Ground, opposite to our present Encampment. To effect this salutary purpose, Colo Knowlton and Major Leitch were detached with parties of Riflemen and Rangers to get in their rear, while a disposition was made as if to attack them in front: By some unhappy mistake, the fire was commenced from that Quarter, rather on their Flank than in their rear; by which Means, though the Enemy were defeated and pushed off the Ground, yet they had an Opportunity of retreating to their Main Body. This piece of success (though it tended greatly to inspire our Troops with confidence), has been in some measure imbittered by the loss of those two brave Officers, who are dead of the Wounds they received in the Action. Since this Skirmish, excepting the affair at Montresor's Island, where Major Henly, another of our best Officers, was slain, there has been nothing of any material Consequence. Indeed, the advantage obtained over the Enemy's Light Troops, might have been improved, perhaps to a considerable extent, had we been in a proper Situation to have made use of this favorable Crisis; but a want of Confidence, in the generality of the Troops, has prevented me from availing myself of that, and almost every other, opportunity, which has presented itself.

I own my fears, that this must ever be the case, when our dependence is placed on Men, inlisted for a few Months, commanded by such Officers as Party, or Accident, may have furnished; and on Militia, who as soon as they are fairly fixed in the Camp are impatient to return to their own Homes; and who, from an

utter disregard of all discipline and restraint among themselves, are but too apt to infuse the like spirit into others. The Evils of short enlistments and employing Militia to oppose against regular and well appointed Troops, I strongly urged to Congress, before the last Army was engaged. Indeed, my own Situation at Cambridge, about the Close of the last Campaign, furnished the most striking example of the fatal tendency of such Measures. I then clearly foresaw, that such an Armament, as we had good reason to expect would be sent against us, could be opposed only by Troops enlisted during the War, and where every Action would add to their experience and improvement, and of whom (if they were unsuccessful in the beginning), a reasonable hope might be entertained, that, in time, they would become as well acquainted with their Business as their Enemy's. This method, I am Convinced, would have been attended with every good Consequence; for, besides the Militia's being altogether unfit for the Service, when Called into the Field, we have discovered from experience, they are much more expensive than any other kind of Troops; and that the War could have been Conducted on More Moderate Terms, by establishing a permanent Body of Forces, who were equal to every contingency, than by Calling in the Militia on imminent and pressing Occasions.

I would not wish to influence your Judgment with respect to Militia, in the Management of Indian affairs, as I am fully persuaded the Inhabitants of the frontier Counties in your Colony, are from inclination, as well as ability,

peculiarly adapted for that kind of Warfare. At the same time, I should think it would be highly advisable, in case you should conceive yourselves to be in danger from any detachment from the British Army, or from their Marines, not to depend on any Troops, but such as are well Officered and Enlisted during the War.

I make no doubt, but your State have turned their Views towards forming some Obstacles against the Enemy's ships and Tenders, who may go up your Rivers, in quest of Provisions, or for the purpose of destroying your Towns. If they have depended on Batteries to prevent them, without any other obstructions, a trial of the matter has taught us to believe it will be altogether Ineffectual; as when under Sail, with wind and Tide in their favor, any damage they may receive from a Battery,

will be of very little Consequence. At the same time, I must observe that this kind of opposition is exceedingly proper for the defence of a Town, or in any Case, where it is necessary the Ships should come to Anchor before the Batteries, for the purpose of Silencing them. In the first Instance, I would strongly recommend Row Gallies, which, if Officered with brave and determined Men, and Conducted with prudence, would, in my Opinion, be productive of the greatest Advantage, and be the most likely means (in your Situation), of securing your Towns and Houses, on the Navigable Waters, from any impression of the Shipping.

I imagine, before this, Congress has made you acquainted with their Resolutions for raising the New Army, and

that your Colony is to furnish fifteen Battalions, to be inlisted during the War. As this will occasion the choosing a Number of New Officers, I would in the most urgent Manner, recommend the utmost care and Circumspection in your several Appointments. I do not expect, that there are Many experienced Gentlemen now left with you, as, from what I have understood, those who have served in the last War are chiefly promoted; however, I am satisfied, that the Military Spirit runs so high in your Colony, and that the Number of Applicants will be so considerable, that a very proper choice may be made. Indeed, the Army's being put upon such a permanent footing, will be a strong inducement for them to step forth on the present interesting occasion. One Circumstance, in this important Business, ought to be cautiously guarded against, and that is, the Soldier and Officer being too nearly on a level. Discipline and Subordination add life and Vigour to Military movements. The person Commanded yields but a reluctant obedience to those, he conceives, are undeservedly made his Superiors. The degrees of Rank are frequently transferred from Civil life into the Departments of the Army. The true Criterion to judge by (when past Services do not enter into the Competition) is, to consider whether the Candidate for Office has a just pretention to the Character of a Gentleman, a proper sense of Honor, and some reputation to loose.

perhaps Sir, you may be surprised at my pressing this advice so strongly, as I have done in this Letter; but I have felt

the inconveniences resulting from a Contrary principle in so sensible a Manner, and this Army has been so greatly enfeebled by a different line of Conduct, that, I hope, you will readily excuse me. I am etc.

**To GOVERNOR JONATHAN TRUMBULL**

Head Quarters, Heights of Harlem, October 8, 1776.

Sir: I was this Morning honored with your favor of the 2d Inst., and beg leave to return you my thanks for the Measures you have adopted, upon my request for obtaining an Account of the Prisoners in your State, and for your Assurance, that I shall be furnished with a Return, as soon as it is procured, in order that I may give further directions about them.

The proposition respecting the Prisoners that wish to remain with us, and about the expence that has been incurred for the maintenance of the whole, that have been in your State; I shall lay before Congress by the earliest opportunity and will transmit you the result of their opinion. However it appears to me; that there will be a necessity for returning the whole of their prisoners, not only because the Ballance is against us, but because I am informed, it was particularly Stipulated on the part of Genl. Montgomery for those that were taken in Canada. the Case will be hard upon those who want to remain and who

have all become attached to us, and should Congress determine on their being returned, it will be but right that some pains should be used, to inform them of the reasons leading to the Measure and I doubt not, if they act with proper Caution, that they may afterwards effect their escape, to which they should be encouraged. indeed I think, if they are heartily disposed towards us, that their Exchange may be productive of many good Consequences; they may extend their influence to many others and who perhaps will be induced to desert.

I hope, the resentment which your State mean to Express against those, who have scandalously deserted from the defence of our Cause, will have a happy effect, and prevent a like Conduct in future; Nothing can be too severe for them. Before the receipt of your favor, I had desired



the General Officers to make out a list of such Field and other Officers, as are esteemed worthy of Command and intitled to Commissions in the Service. This is a Consideration of exceeding Importance, for without good Officers, we can never have Troops that will be worthy of the name, and with them we may in time have an Army equal to any. We have good materials to work upon. As soon as the list is obtained, I will forward it by the first Conveyance that may offer. I have strongly inculcated on the Genls., theimpropriety of giving in or recommending any, but those who are fit for Service; and you may rest assured Sir, as you have been pleased to honor me with your Confidence,

on this occasion, that as far as it shall be in my Power, I will only return those that are well Spoken of, and who from report will Answer, what you have ever had in view, the advancement of our Common rights and the Happiness of the United States. I am etc.

P.S. the following Payments have been made to the Militia of your State, lately here.

1776 Dolls.

Sept. 28. Major Nathl. Torry for his Regiment 5185 9/72

30th Capt Amos Barnes 15th Regt. Commd. by Major Shaw. 5211 38/72

**To GOVERNOR JONATHAN TRUMBULL**

Head Quarters, Harlem Heights, October 9, 1776.

Sir: Agreeable to your request and the Promise contained in my Letter of yesterday; I beg leave to transmit you, the inclosed list, comprehending the names of such Gentlemen as are recommended by the General Officers from your State, as proper persons to be promoted in the Regiments you are about to raise, with the Ranks which they conceive they ought to bear. Sensible that the very existence, that the well doing of every Army, depends upon good Officers; I urged, I pressed the Gentlemen to whom the Business was confided, and whose Situation has given them an

Opportunity, of being better acquainted thro' the different Corps than I am, to pay their most serious attention to the Matter; and to return such and only such, as will in their estimation, by their fidelity, attachment and Good conduct, promote the great End we have in View, the establishment of our rights and the happiness of our Country, by that mode which sad necessity has obliged us to pursue. This I hope they have done, they have taken no Notice of any officer in the Northern Army or of those of the 17th. Regt. (Huntingdon's) who were taken on Long Island; whose Imprisonment I should suppose, if they have Merit, should be no Objection to their having promotion; Nor do they mean by the list they have given in, to preclude others of greater Merit, than those they have Mentioned; if they are to be found. Congress by a late Resolution, have allowed a pay Master to each Regiment, in the appointment of which, I would recommend, that particular Care be had to the Choosing Men, intimately acquainted with and well versed in Accounts and who will be able to keep them in a fair and distinct manner; as they will have not only to receive the Regiments Pay, but to keep Accounts of every transaction incident to them; such as respect their Cloathes &c. In some appointments lately made by the Field Officers to whom I submitted the Matter, they nominated Men who could not write their Names legibly.

As our present Army is upon the Eve of their dissolution; It behoves us to exert every Nerve, to enlist immediately for the New one. Without, I am convinced we shall have none to oppose the Enemy, and who will have it in their power, to spread havock and devastation wheresoever they will; I would therefore submit it to your consideration, whether it may not

be proper, as soon as you have made choice of your Officers and which I think should be effected as early as possible, to appoint a Committee, with power to repair to this place and make such arrangements, as may be Necessary with respect to those who are now in the Service, in order that they may begin to recruit out of the present Corps, without any loss of time.

I perceive the Genls. in the list they have made; have set down the Commissary<sup>9</sup> for a Regiment. In this I think they have done exceedingly right and that it is nothing more than a reward justly due his Merit, in case he should quit his present department; However I hope that the apprehensions,

which have given rise to this step, will never become realities, and that he will continue in his office and upon such terms, as may be agreeable to him; but lest he should decline, the provision they have made, is extremely proper.

I this Minute saw Genl. Spencer, who informed me, that they had never taken the Officers, Prisoners on long Island into Consideration, in making out their Arrangement; not knowing whether they could be noticed in their present situation. I have made out a list of them and as I have before observed, If they are Men of Merit, their imprisonment, most certainly should not operate to their prejudice, if it can be avoided. If a principle of that sort was adopted, it would give the greatest discouragement, and have a direct tendency to suppress every brave and manly enterprize, which might be attended with Captivity.

9. Joseph Trumbull, Commissary General of Stores of the Continental Army. He was also Commissary General of Purchases of the Continental Army from June, 1777, to August, 1777, and a member of the Continental Board of War from November, 1777, to April, 1778. He died July 23, 1778.

I would also mention Major Sherman,<sup>10</sup> Son of Mr. Sherman of Congress, a Young Gentleman who appears to me and who is generally esteemed an Active and Valuable Officer; whom the General Officers have omitted to set down in their Lists, expecting I suppose (if they thought of him at all), that he would be provided for in the Massachusetts Regiments, because he is in one at this time. But as it is probable, promotions in that State will be confined to their own people, I should apprehend that he should be properly noticed in your appointments, lest we should loose an Officer, who so far as I can judge, promises good Services to his Country.

On yesterday morning, three Ships of War 2 of 44 and the other of 20 Guns, with two or three Tenders, passed up the North River, without meeting any interruption from the Chivaux defrise or receiving any material damage from our Batteries; tho' they kept a heavy fire at them from both sides of the River; their views most probably are to cut off all supplies of Boards &c. which might come down the River and of which we shall have great need. I have given directions, to proceed

as fast as possible in carrying on the Obstructions and I would fain hope, if they allow us a little more time, that they will be so far compleated, as to render the passage dangerous, if not altogether insecure. I have the honor etc.

P. S. In respect to the appointment of officers, I would beg leave to add, that the merit of the officers who went thro' the Canada expedition

10. Maj. Isaac Sherman, son of Roger Sherman, of the Twenty-sixth Continental Infantry, He was lieutenant colonel of the Second Connecticut Regiment in January, 1777; lieutenant colonel and commandant of the Eighth Connecticut Regiment in October, 1779; transferred to the Fifth Connecticut Regiment in January, 1781; retired Jan. 1, 1783.

with General Arnold, should in my opinion be particularly noticed: They are now upon their parole and Cannot Act; but should not suitable provision be made for them against their Releasement, which I should suppose ought to be among the first.

## **To GOVERNOR NICHOLAS COOKE**

Head Quarters, Harlem Heights, October 12, 1776.

Sir: The situation of our affairs, and the approaching dissolution of the present Army, calling for every possible exertion on our part to levy a New one; and presuming that your State are about to make an arrangement of Officers, for the quota of Troops they are to furnish, and that they may wish to know those belonging to them, who have served with reputation and bravery; I have thought it expedient, to obtain a return by such means as seemed most likely to be well founded. To this End, I have made inquiry, and the inclosed list which I have the honor to transmit you, comprehends the Names of those, who in public Estimation, and that of the Generals under whom they have more particularly acted, have behaved themselves well and to good acceptance; and whose past Conduct give a reasonable hope, that their future will render material services to their Country.

The Advantages arising from a judicious appointment of Officers, and the fatal consequences that result from the want of them, are too obvious to require Arguments to prove them; I shall, therefore, beg leave to add only, that as the well doing, nay

the very existence of every Army, to any profitable purposes, depend upon it, that too much regard cannot be had to the choosing of Men of Merit and such as are, not only under the influence of a warm attachment to their Country, but who also possess sentiments of principles of the strictest honor. Men of this Character, are fit for Office, and will use their best endeavours to introduce that discipline and subordination, which are essential to good order, and inspire that Confidence in the Men, which alone can give success to the interesting and important contest in which we are engaged. I would also beg leave to subjoin, that it appears to me absolutely necessary, that this business should have your earliest attention, that those, who are nominated, may employ their interest and influence, to recruit Men out of your Corps that are now here, without loss of time.

In respect to the Officers that were in the Canada expedition, their behaviour and merit, and the severities they have experienced, entitle them to a particular notice, in my opinion. However, as they are under their paroles, I would recommend that vacancies should be reserved, for such as you think fit to promote, not wishing them to accept Commissions immediately, or to do the least Act, that may be interpreted a violation of their engagement. Their releasement, I hope, will be soon obtained, as I think them entitled to the first exchange, and which I have mentioned to Congress.

I flatter myself, that the freedom I have taken, in the instances above, will have the indulgence and Pardon of your State, when I assure you, that the list, you will receive, is not

intended to exclude Gentlemen of greater merit, or transmitted with other views, than to assist you, and of promoting the General good; and, also, that the measure has been recommended by a Committee of Congress, who were pleased to honor me with a Visit. I have done the same to Governor Trumbull, at his particular request; and the Officers are making out a Return, to be laid

before the Massachusetts Assembly, of the same Nature, so far as it concerns the Officers from their State. \*\*\*<sup>28</sup>

I like to have omitted mentioning of a Pay master to each Regiment, who I perceive are not noticed in the list transmitted you. Congress by a late Resolution, have allowed such an Officer with Captain's pay and as their duty will be not only to receive the Regiment's Pay, but to keep Accounts of their Cloathing and every other incidental charge; I would beg leave to recommend, that attention should be had to their appointment and that Persons may be nominated who are well versed in Accounts and who can keep them in a fair and proper Manner. I am led to advise

28. The omitted paragraph repeats the news of the British ships sailing up the Hudson, as given in Washington's letter to Congress, Oct. 8, 1776, *q. v.*

this precaution to be used, because it will be an Office of a good deal of Consequence, and because in several Instances in the present Army, where the Appointments were made in Consequence of recommendations from the field Officers; Persons have been put in, who so far from being Accountants, and Answering the designs of Congress, can scarcely write their own names.

October 13.

Yesterday the Enemy landed at Frogs Point, \*\*\*<sup>29</sup> and from the Situation of the Grounds, thro' which they must Pass, if they pursue their Plan, I would fain hope they will sustain considerable Loss, if not a repulse. I have the Honor etc.

**To GOVERNOR JONATHAN TRUMBULL**

Head Quarters, Harlem Heights, October 15, 1776.

Sir: I was last night favored with your Letter of the 6th. Inst.,

29. The omitted paragraph is a repetition of the last one in Washington's letter to Congress, Oct. 11 [12 and 13], 1776, *q. v.*

with the return of Prisoners in your State, for which I thank you. It is properly made out.

Every day's intelligence, from the Convention of this State, mentions Plots and Conspiracies, that are in Agitation among the disaffected. The inclosed Copy of a Letter, which I received yesterday from Robert R Livingston Esqr.; one of the Members and who is of the Continental Congress, will shew you his Idea of the Situation of Affairs in this Government, and their apprehensions of insurrections.<sup>42</sup> The observations he has been pleased to favor me with, thro' the whole of this Letter, seem to me, to be too well founded; the movements of the Enemy; their having sent up some of their Ships in the North River; their landing a large proportion, if not the main Body of their Army on Frog's Point, (or rather Island, as it is surrounded Water every Flood tide) Nine Miles above this on the Sound; added to these, the information of deserters, all afford a strong presumption, nay almost a certainty, that they are pursuing their Original Plan of getting in our rear and Cutting off all our supplies. Our situation here is not exactly the same as it was at New York; it is rather better. However, as we are obliged to divide our force, and guard every probable place of attack as well as we can—As most of our Stores are here and about Kingsbridge, and the preservation of the Communication with the States on the other side of Hudson's River, a Matter of great importance; it will not be possible for me to detach any more assistance, than what I have already done, for the purpose of

42. Livingston's letter, dated Oct. 12, 1776, is in the *Washington Papers*. In it he sketches out the danger of a British advance from the north and the need of a force in the Highlands.

securing the passes in the Highlands. I have sent Colo. Tash, lately from New Hampshire with his Regiment upon the Business, and as it is of the utmost consequence to possess those passes, and to hold them free and open, I would beg leave to submit to your consideration, whether you can spare any aid upon this interesting occasion. I know your exertions already are great; I know you have a large number of Men engaged in the Service, in this and the Northern Army; and nothing

could have induced me to mention this Matter to you, were it not for the Alarming and melancholy consequences, which will result from the Enemy's possessing themselves of those Communications. The Regiment I have ordered up, are to receive directions from the Convention, as to the Posts they are to occupy; supposing them to be much better acquainted, with the Places, where they should be stationed, than I am. If it is in your Power to afford any Assistance in this Instance, you will be pleased to give such instructions to those you send, as you shall judge necessary. I am just dispatching an Engineer to the Convention, to throw up some small Works. I have the honor etc.

P.S. I have sent Two Regiments of the Massachusetts Militia up the River to watch the Motions of the Ships and to oppose any landing of men that they may attempt. I am also extending every Part of my force that I possibly can, towards East and West Chester, to oppose the Enemy and prevent their effecting their Plan, if it

shall be practicable; but our numbers being far inferior to the demands for men, I cannot Answer for what may happen, the most in my Power shall be done.

**To GOVERNOR JONATHAN TRUMBULL**

Head Quarters, Heights of Harlem, October 16, 1776.

Sir: I have been favored with your several Letters of the 11th. and 13th. Instant with their Inclosures. The first that I received, would have been Answered sooner, had I been able to have furnished the necessary Intelligence respecting the Enemy's Ships of War, in the Sound above Hell Gate. This induced me to detain the Express a day, in expectation of gaining a more Certain information of this fact, than what had then come to my knowledge. By some deserters who came a shore from their Shipping at Frog's Point yesterday, and who (from what I could discover on their examination) I think in this Instance are deserving of Credit; "I am acquainted that there are now between Hell Gate and Frog's Point five Ships of War; The Fowey of 24 Guns, The LeBrune of 32, The Carysfort of 28, The Niger of 32. and Halifax of 16, and that the Mercury and one other Ship are cruising off Block Island"; whether their Number may be augmented or diminished in a short time, is more than I can say; though I must observe, that the Enemy's Frigates of 28 Guns, (as we



have found from experience) are not deterred from passing through Hell Gate. I would therefore strongly advise, in case an attack on the Ships of War near Frog's Point,

should be determined on, that Tenders or other small Craft should be sent a head, for the purpose of discovering with certainty the Number and Strength of the Enemy; who from the circumstances I have mentioned, may be easily reinforced. As to furnishing any Soldiers from this Army, towards Manning your Ships, it is what I am sorry under the present appearances of things, I cannot comply with, the Enemy being too powerful on this Quarter to admit of any diminution of the Troops who are to oppose them. For this reason also, I cannot afford any reinforcement to Colo. Livingston,<sup>43</sup> to augment his detachment, from Twelve hundred to two thousand, which you think would be necessary; indeed, as we have received information, that the Enemy have been considerably reinforced by the arrival of Hessians; and as they have from Accounts, drawn almost their whole force to Frog's Point, I think it would be highly advisable (unless the expedition to Long Island is in such forwardness, as to be carried into execution immediately), to send forward the two Massachusetts regiments, who were detained for that particular Service; should it be determined to proceed to Long Island, I cannot interfere by any means in giving the Command to a younger officer. With respect to the Stores at Norwalk and the other Towns you have mentioned, I have ordered them from thence; thinking this method more eligible than to furnish Troops (of which we are in such want) for their defence. I did myself the pleasure of writing to you a few days ago, which I imagine you have received. I am etc.

43. Col. Henry Beekman Livingston, of the Third New York Regiment.

P.S. I have just received the examination of another deserter, who says he came away from the Dolphin (last Thursday) a Sixty Gun ship, in the Sound above Hell Gate, but this I am in doubt about; at any rate (I imagine) if it is true, it must be known to you by information of the Inhabitants living on the Sound.

**To GOVERNOR NICHOLAS COOKE**

Head Quarters, Harlem Heights, October 17, 1776.

Sir: On Monday last I was honored with your favor of the 5th Instt. and beg leave to inform you, that the reasons which you assign for Countermanding Colo Richmond's<sup>45</sup> march appear to me strong and Substantial. As to the expedition to long Island, it is impossible for me to give any direction about it, it must be governed by a Variety of Circumstances; nor will it be in my power, to appoint any Person to Command it; the situation of our affairs here, requiring the presence of every Officer of the least merit, for the government of this Army.

In respect to your request, to have a list transmitted, of such Officers as have served to good acceptance; I am happy that I had anticipated your views and those of your Honble. Assembly in this instance, before the receipt of your favor, I wrote you fully on the subject in a Letter I had the Honor of addressing you on the 12th, sending you a list of such Officers as were particularly

45. Col. William Richmond, of the Rhode Island Militia.

recommended for the two Battalions you are to raise, to which I beg leave to refer you as it contains my Sentiments at large. I have the honor etc.

## **To THE NEW YORK LEGISLATURE**

Head Quarters, Harlem Heights, October 17, 1776.

Gentn.: Judging it a Matter of the utmost importance, to secure the passes thro' the Highlands, I have sent up Monsr. Imbert<sup>46</sup> a French Gentleman, who has been placed in the Army, as an Engineer by Congress, in order to take your directions respecting the passes and such Works as you may Esteem necessary to preserve them. as the situation of affairs in this State is rather alarming, I would beg leave to recommend your earliest attention to this Business, and that no time may elapse before the Works are begun. I have no acquaintance with Monsr. Imbert, and his abilities in his

profession remain to be proved; However, I trust under your care and advice, that whatever maybe essential will be immediately done. I have the Honor etc.

P.S. I can spare no other Engineer, having but one besides.

46. Capt. Jean Louis Imbert, who was commissioned by Congress September 19. He returned to San Domingo in April, 1777.

## **To THE MASSACHUSETTS LEGISLATURE**

White Plains, November 6, 1776.

Gentn: The Situation of our affairs is critical and truly alarming; the dissolution of our Army is fast approaching and but little, if any, prospect of levying a New One, in a reasonable time; A large part of it, under the denomination of new Levies, are now on the eve of their departure, and this at a time when the Enemy have a very numerous and formadable force, watching an opportunity to execute their plans and to spread

ruin and devastation among us. Impressed with the importance of these Matters, I this day laid them before a Council of Genl. Officers, with a view of Obtaining their opinion upon the same; and of the Measures, which in their judgment, should be immediately adopted; The result was, that I should apply to several of the States for supplies of Militia, and that your Honble. Assembly, should be requested to furnish, as soon as possible, 4,000. as their Quota, to be properly accoutred and equipped with every necessary, to supply the place of those, who are now here under General Lincoln, and who, I fear, will not be prevail'd upon to stay longer than the time they engaged for, at first. The hope and probability of raising a New Army, within a convenient time, are so little, and the consequences so evidently alarming, if a Sufficient force is not kept up to counteract the designs of the Enemy in the mean time; that the Council and myself have unanimously agreed, that the Militia should be engaged, if possible, to continue till the first of March, unless their Return can be sooner dispensed with. We flatter ourselves by that time, if not long before, such an Army will be

levyed, as to render any future claims upon them, unless in cases of the most pressing emergency, altogether unnecessary.

From the experience, I have had, of your past exertions in times of difficulty, I know that nothing, in your power to effect, will be wanting, and with the greatest confidence I trust, that the present requisition will have your most ready approbation and Compliance; being in some degree anticipated by the inquiry

you have directed to be made into the state of our affairs, and whether any farther aid will be necessary. I have the Honor etc.<sup>88</sup>

#### **To THE COMMISSIONERS OF ARRANGEMENT FROM PENNSYLVANIA**

White Plains, November 6, 1776.

Gentn.: Your favor of the 23d Instr., expressing your astonishment, that recruiting orders had not been issued to Colo. Magaw and Col. Cadwalladar, has been duly received. As it seems founded on Assurances given by me, I think it my Duty to explain the Matter and call to your recollection some circumstances, which perhaps in the hurry of Business, you may have forgot. At the time you left Kingsbridge no one Officer that I recollect was fixed on nor was it known whether Col Cadwalleder would accept the Regiment if in his Power. There was not Money in the Continental Treasury at that time, to advance for the Bounty of even Hand's Regiment and all those who were consulted, agreed that it answered no Purpose to attempt the Business, without the Money in Hand. Another thing Gentlemen, you will I doubt not, agree with me in that it could not be the Generals Duty or that of any other General Officer to attend upon the Officers of those two Battalions, to know whether they would serve, or set about the Business,

88. The draft is in the writing of William Grayson.

of recruiting and I am very confident that no application was made for Money or recruiting Orders: nor indeed could they, for the Enemy landed immediately after at Frog's Point. The

Army immediately moved and has been moving ever since, so that there has not been leisure or Opportunity for transacting Business of this kind. our Communication with Mount Washington has now been cut off for 2 Weeks and in short the Variety of Avocations to the immediate Safety and Interest of the Army under constant alarms and the approach of the Enemy has made that very natural to those on the spot which may appear very much otherwise to Gentlemen, whose short stay at such Times in the Camp, does not enable them to judge of the Difficulties which occur upon such occasions.

The Necessity of appointing the officers who were to execute the recruiting Orders will appear, when it is recollected, that at that time it was understood, that 10/ was to be allowed for every Man recruited; so that the appointment must of course precede the Service. This the Congress have since altered. I have the Honor etc.<sup>91</sup>

**To GOVERNOR WILLIAM LIVINGSTON**

White Plains, November 7, 1776.<sup>94</sup>

Sir: On Tuesday Morning the Enemy broke up their Encampments which were in front of our lines, after having remained

91. The draft is in the writing of Joseph Reed.

94. On November 7 Robert Hanson Harrison wrote to Governor Trumbull, by direction of Washington, requesting a reenforcement of militia. This letter is in the *Washington Papers* and is printed in Force's *American Archives*.

there several days, without attempting any thing; they have gone towards the North River and Kingsbridge.

This Sudden and unexpected Movement, is a Matter of much Speculation, some suppose they are going into Winter Quarters, and will set down in New York, without doing more than investing

Fort Washington; I cannot subscribe wholly to this Opinion myself; That they will invest Fort Washington, is a Matter of which there can be no doubt; and I think, there is a strong probability, that Genl. Howe will detach a part of his Force to make an Incursion into the Jerseys, provided he is going to New York. He must attempt something on Acct. of his Reputation, for what has he done as yet, with his great Army?

Persuaded that an Expedition to the Jerseys, will succeed his arrival in New York, with a Detachment of his Army; as soon as I can be satisfied, that the present Manœuvre is a real Retreat, and not a feint; I shall throw over a body of our Troops, with the utmost expedition, to assist in checking their progress. At the same time I beg leave to recommend to your Consideration, the propriety and Necessity that some Measures should be taken, to place your Militia, on the best footing Possible, and that a part of them may be in readiness to Supply the place of the Troops (denominated New Levies) from your State, whose time of Service will presently expire. Your Vigilance and Attention, I know, will not be wanting in any Instance; yet there is one thing more I will take the liberty to mention; that is, that the Inhabitants contiguous to the

Water, should be prepared to remove their Stock, Grain, Effects and Carriages upon the earliest Notice. If they are not, the Calamities they will suffer, will be beyond all Description, and the Advantages derived to the Enemy immensely great; They have treated all here without discrimination. The distinction of Whig and Tory has been lost in one General Scene of Ravage and desolation. The Article of Forrage is of great Importance to them; not a Blade should remain for their use, what cannot be removed with Convenience should be consumed without the least Hesitation. These Several Matters I thought it my duty to suggest to you, not doubting, but you will give them such attention, as they may seem to deserve; and that your own good judgment will point out many more necessary regulations adapted to the Exigency of our affairs.

I do not know the State of the Barracks about Elizabeth Town, Amboy, and Brunswick; they may be exceedingly necessary to cover our Troops, I think it will be adviseable to have them examined,

and that you should direct such necessary Repairs to be made as they may require. I have the honor  
etc.<sup>95</sup>

95. The draft is in the writing of Tench Tilghman.

**To GOVERNOR JONATHAN TRUMBULL**

Head Quarters, November 10, 1776.

Sir: I was yesterday Evening favored with a Call by the Gentlemen appointed Commissioners from your State, to arrange your officers, and to adopt some line of Conduct for recruiting the Quota of Men, which you are to furnish.

In discussing this Subject, the Gentlemen informed me, that your Assembly, to induce their Men to enlist more readily into the Service, had passed a vote advancing their pay Twenty Shillings pr Month, over and above that allowed by Congress.

It is seldom that I interfere in the determinations of any Public body, or venture to hold forth my opinion, contrary to the decisions which they form; but, upon this occasion, I must take the Liberty to mention, (especially as the influence of that Vote will be general and Continental), that, according to my Ideas and those of every General Officer I have Consulted with, a more mistaken Policy could not have been adopted, or one that, in its Consequences, will more effectually prevent the great object which Congress have in view, and which the Situation of our affairs so loudly calls for, The Levying of a New Army. That the advance, allowed by your State, may be the means of raising your Quota of Men, sooner than it otherwise would, perhaps may be true; but, when it is considered, that it will be an effectual bar to the other States raising the Quotas exacted from them,—When It is certain, that, if their Quotas could be made up without this advance coming to their knowledge; that the moment they come to Act with Troops who receive a higher pay, that jealousy, impatience and mutiny will immediately take place, and occasion desertions, if not a total dissolution of the Army. It must be viewed in an Injurious and fatal point of light. That Troops will never act together, in the same Cause and for different pay, must be obvious to every one;

Experience has already proved it in this Army. That Congress will take up the Matter and make the advance General, is a matter of which there can be but little probability, as the addition of a Suit of Cloathes

to the former pay of the Privates, was a long time debated before it could be obtained. I have, etc.<sup>15</sup>

## **To THE NEW YORK LEGISLATURE**

General Greene's Quarters, November 16, 1776.

Gentn.: I do myself the honor to transmit to you, a Copy of Sundry Resolves of Congress which came to hand yesterday evening. By these you will perceive, that they have entered in to some new regulations respecting the Inlistment of the new Army; and reprobating the measures, which I presume you have heard, have been adopted by the State of Massachusetts Bay, for raising the Quota to be furnished by them: My view in doing this, is to inform you of their sense upon this Subject, and that they will admit of no departure from the Terms they themselves have heretofore published, except in the instances which are mentioned in these Resolves; they are plain and explicit, and I will take the Liberty to add, should form a part of the Instructions to be given to the Officers, who may be appointed to recruit.

I would also beg leave to observe that the necessity of raising the new army, becomes more and more urgent, and is such, as calls for every possible exertion to effect it.<sup>43</sup>

The Congress convinced of this and seeing the delays of some of the States, in carrying the Resolves recommended to them into execution, have impowred and required me, to nominate

15. The draft is in the writing of Robert Hanson Harrison.

43. At this point in the draft is stricken out "exertion on the part of the Several States. The dissolution of the present, is fast approaching, nay the departure of a large portion of. It, is on the Eve of taking place. These facts are all known, but yet seem not to be sufficiently attended to."



officers to the Regiments of such States, as have not sent Commissioners to the Army, for that purpose. As this is a Matter in which I would not wish to interfere at this time, farther than compelled by their direction and the situation of our affairs, I shall be happy to know what progress you have made in this Instance, and whether the arrangement for your Regiments is compleated. If it is not finished, let me intreat you to do it, as speedily as possible.—The necessity is obvious and must be felt by every one; till the officers are appointed, no measures for enlisting men can be pursued. If the bounty allowed by Congress, could be paid down, it is more than probable, it might induce many to engage more readily. under this Idea I shall be ready to advance to such officers as you appoint to the Command of the Regiments, upon your requisition, such sums of Money as may be sufficient for that purpose, If provision has not been, or shall not be otherwise made by Congress for the same.

I am sorry to inform you that this day about 12 O'Clock the Enemy made a General Attack upon our Lines about Fort Washington; which having carried, the Garrison retired within the Fort, Colo Magaw, finding there was no possibility of a Retreat across the North River, over to Fort Lee, surrendered the Post. We do not yet know our own loss or that of the Enemy in forcing the Lines; but I imagine it must have been considerable on both sides, as the Fire in some Parts was of long continuance and heavy; neither do I know the Terms of Capitulation. The

Force of the Garrison before the Attack was about 2000 Men. I have the honor to be, etc.<sup>44</sup>

## **To GOVERNOR WILLIAM LIVINGSTON**

Aquackinack Bridge, November 21, 1776.

Sir: I have this Moment arrived at this Place with Genl. Beall's and Genl. Heard's Brigades from Maryland and Jersey, and part of General Ewing's<sup>71</sup> from Pennsylvania; Three other Regiments, left to guard the Passes upon Hackensack River, and to serve as covering Parties, are expected up this Evening. After the unfortunate Loss of Fort Washington, it was determined to evacuate Fort Lee, in a great Measure; as it was in a Manner useless in obstructing the Passage of the

North River, without the assistance of Fort Washington. The Ammunition and some other Stores were accordingly removed; but, before we could effect our purpose, the Enemy landed yesterday Morning, in very considerable numbers, about Six Miles above the Fort; Their intent evidently was to form a line across, from the place of their landing to Hackensack Bridge, and thereby hem in the whole Garrison between the North and Hackensack Rivers. However, we were lucky enough to gain the Bridge before them; by which means we saved all our men, but were obliged to leave some hundred Barrels of Flour, most of our Cannon, and a considerable parcel of Tents and Baggage. Finding we were in the same danger of being pent up between Hackensack and Passaic

44. The draft is in the writing of Robert Hanson Harrison and Tench Tilghman.

71. Ford notes the confusion in Brig. Gen. James Ewing's name by different historians: Marshall spells it Irvine; Wilkinson, Irvin; Botta, Irwin; and Gordon, Erwing.

Rivers, that we had been between the North and Hackensack; and also finding the Country, from its levelness and openness, unfit for making a stand; it was determined to draw the whole of our Force over this side of the River, where we can watch the operations of the Enemy, without danger of their surrounding us, or making a Lodgement in our Rear. But, as our numbers are still very inadequate to that of the Enemy, I imagine I shall be obliged to fall down toward Brunswick, and form a junction with the Troops, already in that Quarter, under the Command of Lord Stirling. As the term of the Inlistment of the flying Camp, belonging to Jersey, Pennsylvania, and Maryland, is near expiring; it will occasion so great a diminution of my Army, that I submit it to your judgment, whether it would not be proper for you to call together such a Number of Militia, as, in Conjunction with the Troops I shall have left, will serve to cover the Country and stop the Progress of the Enemy, if they should still attempt to penetrate. If the weather continues favorable, I am apprehensive they will attempt to make amends for the Slowness of their Operations the beginning of the Campaign. I have the honor to be, etc.<sup>72</sup>

**To GOVERNOR WILLIAM LIVINGSTON**

Head Quarters, New Ark, November 23, 1776.

Sir: The Critical Situation of our affairs and the

72. The draft is in the writing of Tench Tilghman.

movements of the Enemy make some further and immediate exertions absolutely necessary. In order that you may have the fullest Representation and form a perfect Idea of what is now necessary, I have desired Col. Reed to wait on you, and must refer you to him for particulars. I am etc.

**To GOVERNOR WILLIAM LIVINGSTON**

Head Quarters, Brunswick, November 30, 1776.

Sir: I have the pleasure and Honor of acknowledging the Receipt of yours of the 27th.<sup>91</sup> General Williamson gives me small Encouragement to hope for much Assistance from the Militia of this State; indeed some of the Counties, if they were willing, are intimidated from coming in, as the Enemy have possession of the Country. I hope the four Regiments, to be raised to serve till the first of April, will be quickly full, as more dependance is to be put upon them, than Common Militia. The time of General Heard's Brigade of flying Camp Men for this State, and that of Genl. Beall's from Maryland, expires this day; so that the army will by that means, suffer a very considerable diminution. But what is still worse, altho' most of the Pennsylvanians are inlisted till the first of January, I am informed that they are deserting in great numbers; I therefore intreat, that you would without loss of time, give orders to the officers of Militia on the Roads and the Ferries over Delaware,

91. Governor Livingston had written (November 27): "I can easily form some Idea of the Difficulties under which you labour and particularly of one for which the public can make no allowances because your Prudence and Fidelity to the Cause will not suffer you to reveal it to the public, an instance of Magnanimity superior perhaps to any that can be shewn in Battle. But

depend upon it, my dear Sir, the impartial World will do you ample Justice before Long. May God support you under that Fatigue both of Body and Mind to which you must be constantly exposed.” Livingston's letter is in the *Washington Papers*.

to take up and secure every Soldier that has not a regular discharge or Pass. In order to effect this, proper guards should be immediately posted.

I thank you most sincerely for your feelings for me at this time and upon this occasion; I will not however despair; but look forward with a hope that such Reinforcements will yet arrive to my assistance, as will enable me to prevent our common Enemy from making much further Progress. I am, etc.<sup>92</sup>

#### **To GOVERNOR WILLIAM LIVINGSTON**

Brunswick, December 1, 1776.

Dear Sir: I wrote to you yesterday; but, as from every Information of the motions of the Enemy, their intent seems plainly directed thro' this State, and then on to Philadelphia; I cannot help calling on you, in the most urgent Manner, and begging you to fall upon proper means to draw forth the Strength of your province to my support.

The Enemy's advanced Parties were last night at Bonum Town, four Miles on this side of Woodbridge;<sup>6</sup> They are impressing Waggon and Horses, and Collecting Cattle and Sheep; which is a further proof of their intent to march a Considerable distance. Unless my force is speedily augmented, it will be impossible for me to make

92. The draft is in the writing of Tench Tilghman.

6. “The defenceless legislature [of New Jersey], with their Governor at their head, wandered from Princeton to Burlington, from Burlington to Pittstown, from Pittstown to Haddonfield, and there, finally, at the utmost verge of the State, dissolved themselves on the 2d of December, leaving

each member to look to his own safety, at a moment when the efforts of legislators would be of no avail.” (See Sedgwick's *Life of William Livingston*.)

any stand at this Place, when the Enemy advance; as I have not, including General Williamson's<sup>7</sup> Militia (say 1,000) more than four thousand men. The Militia from the Counties of Morris and Sussex, turn out slowly and reluctantly, whether owing to the want of officers of Spirit to encourage them, or your Summons not being regularly sent to them, I cannot say; but, I have reason to believe, there has been a deficiency in both Cases. Designing men have been purposely sent among them, to influence some and intimidate others; and, except Gentlemen of Spirit and Character will appear among them, and rouse them, little can be expected. I wrote to Genl. Williamson last Night, and pressed him to exert himself; but, I have reason to believe, he has not the confidence of the People, as much as could be wished. My Accounts of the Reinforcements, to be expected from Pennsylvania, are very encouraging; but, from the Distance and Necessary delays attending a Sudden march, I cannot look for them under a Week or ten days; in which time the Enemy will have reached the Delaware, at least, if not opposed by more than my present Numbers. Genl Lee is on his march down to join me; but, if the Enemy should throw in a body of men between us, he will be obliged to make a considerable circuit, to avoid them. The Boats and Craft, all along the Delaware side, should be secured; particularly the Durham Boats used for the Transportation of produce down the River. Parties should be sent to all the landings to have them removed to the other side, hawled up, and put under proper Guards. One such Boat would transport a Regiment of Men. I have &c.<sup>8</sup>

7. Brig. Gen. Matthias Williamson, of the New Jersey Militia.

8. The draft is in the writing of Tench Tilghman.

## **To THE PENNSYLVANIA COUNCIL OF SAFETY**

Head Quarters, Trenton Falls, December 10, 1776.

Sir: Yours of last evening reached me at 4 OClock this Morning. I immediately sent orders to Commodore Seymour,<sup>61</sup> to dispatch one of his Gallies down to Dunk's Ferry, and I shall dispose of the remainder in such manner, and at such places, as will be most likely, not only to annoy the Enemy in their passage, but to give the earliest Information of any attempt of that kind. Parties of the Enemy have been reconnoitring both up and down the River, and I imagine it has been one of those parties that have appeared near Burlington; for as they have not found the least Opposition from the people of Jersey, they venture very far from their Main Body; which from the best Information, still lays about Trenton and above it.

I have desired Col. Humpton, who is the Bearer of this, to apply for a Party of Men, to go up Cooper's and Ancocus<sup>62</sup> Creeks, and bring down all the Craft he may find there; for it is in vain to cut down Bridges, if the Boats are left; they cannot be trusted to the Owners, for if an Enemy was to appear, such is their fear, that they would deliver them up, upon the first demand.

I think that the Fort began at Billingsport should be attended to; if there is not a party already there, one should be sent under a good Officer, who would not too readily take the alarm and come off; for you may depend, that only small Bodies will be sent to that Distance. But I have always found, that the Intelligence brought by people not used to see Men in Arms, has always

61. Commodore Thomas Seymour. He commanded the Pennsylvania State Navy.

62. Cooper Creek in Camden County, N. J., directly opposite Philadelphia, and Rancocas Creek in Burlington County, N. J., 10 miles or so above Philadelphia.

magnified numbers exceedingly, and on this Head the officer should be guarded, not to trust to Report, but be well Satisfied himself before he gives up his post.

Having sent down Major General Putnam to throw up necessary Works for the Defence of your City, I hope you will co-operate with him, and give him every assistance in your Power to expedite so necessary an Operation. I have the honor to be, etc.<sup>63</sup>

**To GOVERNOR JONATHAN TRUMBULL**

Head Quarters, Trenton Falls, December 12, 1776.

Sir: I was, a few days ago, favoured with yours of the 30th. last month)<sup>72</sup> and this is the first Opportunity that afforded me the pleasure of answering it. The Event has shewn, that my Opinion, of General Howe's Intentions to make an Excursion into Jersey, was not ill founded. Immediately after the Reduction of Fort Washington, he threw a Body of Men, consisting of about 6.000 over the North River, with an Intention to surprise the Garrison of Fort Lee; but they withdrew before he could accomplish his purpose. Finding the few Troops, I had with me, insufficient to oppose the Enemy, and knowing that my numbers would still be diminished by the Expiration of the Service of the flying Camp Men from Jersey, Maryland, and Pennsylvania, which would take Place on the last day of November; it was

63. The draft is in the writing of Tench Tilghman.

72. Trumbull's letter, outlining the Connecticut arrangements for supplying her troops, dated Nov. 30, 1776, is in the *Washington Papers*.

determined to retreat as far as Brunswick; where I hoped to receive a Reinforcement from the Militia of the State of New Jersey, sufficient to check the further progress of the Enemy. But in this I was cruelly disappointed. The In habitants of this State, either from fear or disaffection, almost to a Man refused to turn out; and I could not bring together above 1.000 Men; and, even on these, very little dependance was to be put. My Numbers were now reduced to three thousand Men, and that of the Enemy considerably increased by fresh reinforcements. I had sent General Mifflin down to Philadelphia, to raise what Force he could in that Province and send them on, with all speed

to my Assistance. I fell down myself to Trenton, in order to wait for Supplies, hoping that such Numbers would come in from Pennsylvania, as would enable me to turn upon the Enemy, and recover most of the Ground which they had gained. General Mifflin was very Successful with the Militia of Philadelphia, who turned out in a very Spirited Manner, and immediately Marched about 1.500 Men up to Trenton; but the remainder of the Province continues in a State of Supineness; nor do I see any likelihood of their stirring, to save their own Capital, which is undoubtedly General Howe's great object. The Delaware now parts the two Armies; and nothing hinders the passage of the Enemy, but the Want of Boats, which we have been lucky enough to secure. General Lee is still in the rear of the Enemy, with about four thousand Men, with whom he is on his March to join me; if he can effect this junction, our Army will again make a

respectable appearance, and such as, I hope, will disappoint the Enemy in their plan upon Philadelphia. I sent down General Putnam, a few days ago, to begin upon some works for the defence of that City; upon the Salvation of which our Cause almost depends. I am informed that the Inlistment of the New Army goes on very Successfully to the Eastward and Southward; little or nothing can be expected from New York or Jersey, which are, for the most part, in the Hands of the Enemy. Every thing must depend upon the regular Force we can bring into the Field in the Spring; for I find, from fatal Experience, that Militia serve only to delude us.

As my Distance from the Eastern Governments makes me ignorant of their present Circumstances; I will not undertake to direct the Disposition of the four Regiments, you have Ordered to be raised, till the 15th March. I would only recommend, if they can be spared, that they should March and take post at the Highlands and at the Forts upon the North River, as much depends still upon keeping possession of the upper part of that River. I highly approve of your Plan, for supplying your New Army with Necessaries; our old one has suffered considerably for want of some such wholesome Regulations; you may depend upon my giving due Countenance to such a commendable Scheme. I am etc.<sup>73</sup>

73. The draft is in the writing of Tench Tilghman.



## To GOVERNOR JONATHAN TRUMBULL

Head Quarters, Bucks County, December 14, 1776.

Sir: I was last night favored with yours of the 6th. In a letter, which I did myself the pleasure to write to you two days ago, I gave you a full Account of my present Situation and the occurrences that have happened since I left the Neighbourhood of Fort Lee. The want of Means of Transportation, has hitherto hindered the Enemy from making any Attempt to cross the Delaware; and, I hope, unless the Course of the Season intirely changes, that the Weather will soon prevent their making use of Boats, if they should build them.

Your Situation to the Eastward is truly alarming; and I wish it were in my power to afford you that assistance that is requisite.<sup>97</sup> You must be sensible, that it is impossible for me to detach any part of my small Army, when I have an Enemy far superior in numbers to oppose; but I have immediately countermanded the march of General Heath's Division, who were coming down from Peekskill; they are ordered to return again to that place, and hold themselves ready to move, as occasion may require. Genl Lee's division are so necessary to support this part of the Army, that, without their Assistance, we must inevitably be overpowred, and Philadelphia lost. I have Ordered General Arnold, who was on his way down from Ticonderoga, immediately to repair to New London, or wherever his presence will be most necessary. The Troops, that came down with him and Genl. Gates, are already, [from the advices I have received] so far advanced towards this Army, that to

97. Sparks notes that General Clinton and Earl Percy, with 6,000 British troops detached from the main army at New York, took possession of Newport and Rhode Island on December 8. For the letters of General Clinton and Sir Peter Parker relating to this event see the *Remembrancer*, vol. 3, pp. 261, 262.

countermand them now, would be loosing the small remainder of their Service intirely; as the Time of their Inlistments would expire, before they could possibly reach you; Whereas by coming on, they may in conjunction with my present Force and that under Genl. Lee, enable us to attempt a

Stroke upon the Forces of the Enemy, who lay a good deal scattered and to all appearance in a state of Security. A lucky Blow in this Quarter, would be fatal to them, and would most certainly raise the Spirits of the People, which are quite sunk by our late misfortunes.

In the Interval, between the Dissolution of the old and the Inlistment of the New Army, we must put our dependance on the public Spirit and Virtue of the People; which, I am sorry to say, has manifested but too small a Regard to their rights and Liberties in the States of New Jersey and Pennsylvania; the Citizens of Philadelphia excepted; but, I hope, such a Spirit still exists among your people, as will convince these bold Invaders, that, altho' they may, by a Superior Naval Force, take possession of your Sea port Towns, yet, they cannot penetrate and over run your Country with Impunity. I have the Honor to be, etc.

P.S. I have just received a Letter from General Heath of the 10th. Inst., in which he informs me, that his Division was to Cross the North River on that day; so that they must be at Morris Town by this time, which is but 50 Miles from hence; upon this Consideration, I have

changed my Intention of countermanding him, for the same reasons as given in my Letter above, respecting the Troops under Generals Gates and Arnold.<sup>98</sup>

## **To THE PENNSYLVANIA COUNCIL OF SAFETY**

Head Quarters, Bucks County, December 15, 1776.

Gentn.: With the utmost regret, I must inform you of the loss our Army has sustained, by the Captivity of General Lee, who was made a prisoner on the Morning of the 13th. by a party of 70. of the Enemy's Light Horse, near a place call'd Veal Town, in the Jerseys. For the particulars, I refer you to the inclosed from General Sullivan.<sup>13</sup>

The Spirit of disaffection that appears in this Country, I think, deserves your serious attention; instead of giving any Assistance in repelling the Enemy; the Militia have not only refused to obey your General Summons and that of their Commanding Officers; but, I am told, exult at the approach

of the Enemy, and our late misfortunes. I beg leave to submit to your Consideration, whether such people are to be trusted with Arms in their Hands? If they will not use them for us, there is the greatest reason to apprehend they will against us, if opportunity offers. But, even supposing they claimed a right of remaining Neuter; in my Opinion, we ought not to hesitate a Moment in taking their Arms, which will be so much wanted in furnishing the New Levies. If such a step meets your approbation, I leave it to you to determine upon the Mode. If you think fit to empower me, I will undertake to have it done, as speedily

13. Sullivan's letter, dated Dec. 13, 1776, is in the *Washington Papers*.

and effectually as possible. You must be sensible that the utmost secrecy is necessary [both in your deliberations on, and in the execution of] a Matter of this kind; for, if the thing should take wind, the Arms would presently be conveyed beyond our reach, or rendered useless.

Your favors of the 13th. and 14th. Inst.<sup>14</sup> are this moment come to my hands; I am glad to find from the latter, that the Militia of Lancaster County are in Motion; and I am in hopes, that General Mifflin's appearance, in the different Counties, will have as good an Effect as it had in Philadelphia. I have received information, that the Body of the Enemy which lay at Pennington, under Lord Cornwallis, moved this morning back towards Princetown; if so, it looks as if they were going into Quarters; and this Corresponds with the Account brought last night by a Prisoner, a Servant belonging to Genl. Vaughan's family, who says he heard his Master talk of going soon into Winter Quarters. The Body, that lay at Trenton, are likewise filing off[ towards Allen Town and Bordentown, with their Baggage; which makes me conjecture, they are taking the Road to South Amboy. I have a Number of Small Parties out to make discoveries; and, if the Motions of the Enemy are really such, as I have mentioned above, I shall soon have information of it. In the mean time, my Troops are so stationed, as to prevent them from crossing the River at any place, without our knowledge. But, I am in great Hopes, that the disappointment in Boats and the lateness of the Season, which now begins to put on the face of Winter, will prevent their making any Attempt upon Philadelphia till Spring. This, however, should not in

14. These letters are in the *Washington Papers*.

the least slacken your Exertions in making the necessary preparations for the Fortification and Defence of the City by land and Water; for you may be assured that will be their first and great object in the Spring. I have the Honor &c.<sup>15</sup>

**To THE PENNSYLVANIA COUNCIL OF SAFETY**

Head Quarters, December 16, 1776.

Gentn.: I have just the pleasure of receiving yours of yesterday. I shall give the Deputy Quarter Master General orders, to have the Cloathing both new and old brought up to the Army, and have it distributed as it is most wanted; but you may depend, if the old Cloaths which have been so Charitably contributed by the Inhabitants of Philadelphia can answer the present Necessities of the other Regiments, that the New, shall be all applied to the Regiment particularly belonging to your State.<sup>21</sup>

I am glad to find the Militia from the Eastern parts of your Province, the lower parts of Jersey and the Delaware Counties, are turning out with proper Spirit; I hope with their Assistance we shall be able to check the Enemy, if they should still determine to pass the Delaware. I am, etc.

P. S. I beg you will by all ways and means facilitate and encourage the Recruiting Service, for on that every thing depends.<sup>22</sup>

15. The draft is in the writing of Tench Tilghman. The words in brackets are in Washington's writing.

21. Mifflin had sent 300 suits of clothes to Neshaminy Ferry; but as the council had used State clothing for the Continental recruits, it asked that a replacement for its regiment be made from these 300.

22. In the writing of Tench Tilghman.

**To THE NEW YORK LEGISLATURE**

Head Quarters, Bucks County, December 16, 1776.

Gentn.: I was last Night honored with yours of the 11th Inst. inclosing Sundry Resolutions of your Board; I have also to acknowledge the receipt of your favor of the 23d November, which should not have remained so long unanswered, had not the continued Motion of our Army for some time past, put it out of my power to sit regularly down to Business. Indeed, I have now so much on my hands, and such a choice of difficulties, that I hardly know which first to attend to. I know you have had your difficulties too, indeed more than any other State, and you have therefore my thanks, not only for the Compleat arrangement of your Officers, for the four Battalions allotted to your Share, but for your determination to raise a fifth to be Commanded by Colo. Dubois.<sup>23</sup> As the Office of Aid Major has been hitherto unknown in the Continental Service, perhaps by introducing it among your Regiments, umbrage might be given to the others, if they were not likewise provided with an officer of the same kind, and therefore to avoid disputes, I could wish the Matter might be waved.

Major Sheldon who Commands the Connecticut Horse, will return in a few days, he will either take the Troop with him from Fishkills, or post them where they are more wanted.

I thank you for the great Confidence you are pleased to repose in me, and you may be assured, that whatever Military Powers shall be intrusted to me, shall ever be exerted first to establish and then protect the Civil.<sup>24</sup>

23. Col. Lewis Dubois, of the Fifth New York Regiment. He was captured at Fort Montgomery, N.Y., in October, 1777; resigned in December, 1779; served subsequently as colonel of New York levies.

24. The letter from the New York Committee of Safety stated: “The Delicacy which your Excellency has ever observed with Respect to the Civil Power of this State merits their Warmest Acknowledgments and will always induce them the more Cheerfully and Streneously to Cooperate with your Excellency in every measure that may be deemed Conducive to the public Weal.” This letter, dated Nov. 23, 1776, is in the *Washington Papers*.

I come now to answer yours of the 11th. When I ordered down Genl. Heath from his post at the Highlands; it was done in consequence of a Determination of a Council of General Officers, who agreed that we had no other means of Stopping the progress of Genl Howe, who was evidently making a grand push to make himself Master of Philadelphia. The advantages of keeping possession of the posts in the Highlands were not unattended to; we considered that the Enemy had thrown the Main Body of their Army over into Jersey; that they were about to make a Considerable Embarkation (which has since turned out to be against New England) and that it would take most, if not the remainder of their Army, to keep up the Garrisons at New York &c. and that therefore they had not a sufficient force left to attempt the strong posts at the Highlands, tho' only guarded [by Genl. Geo: Clinton with the force of the State of New York].

General Howe easily forced our small Army to retreat before him to the Delaware; but not finding Boats to transport his Troops, (we having had time and precaution to secure and destroy them), he seems by his late Motions to be moving back towards Brunswick for Winter Quarters [or intending a feint]. Upon this change of Measures, I have immediately ordered Genl Heath to return to Peekskill with General Parsons's Brigade. If he finds any of the Enemy's Posts at Hackensack or elsewhere weakly guarded he is to endeavour to beat them up. As the Inlistment of the greatest part of the Continental Army, expires on the first of January, every State must exert itself in forwarding the new Inlistments and

procuring temporary Supplies of Militia, till the New Levies can be brought into the Field. I have the Honor etc.<sup>25</sup>

## **To GOVERNOR JONATHAN TRUMBULL**

Head Qurs., State of Pennsa., Bucks County, December 16, 1776.

Dear Sir: The Congress have been pleased to appoint Elisha Sheldon Esqr. of your State to be Lieut. Col Commandant of a Regiment of Cavalry; for the purpose of Raising them he now sets of for Connecticut. Having to pass thro' an Enemy's Country on his way there, I cannot think it prudent to advance him the Sum necessary for his Immediate use. I have to request you will furnish him with what Money he may want from the Treasury of your State or in any other way you may think best; which Sum you'll please to draw on the Continent, thro' me for. I am &c.<sup>26</sup>

## **To THE PENNSYLVANIA COUNCIL OF SAFETY**

Head Quarters, Bucks County, December 17, 1776.

Gentn.: Since I wrote to you yesterday, I have received Information that the Enemy are still moving downwards; and by their making Fascines, they either have not yet laid aside their designs upon Philada., or they mean to Quarter in the small Towns

25. The draft is in the writing of Tench Tilghman. The words in brackets are in Washington's writing.

26. The draft is in the writing of Samuel Blatchley Webb.

along the River; in which Case I suppose they would throw up small Works to prevent a surprise. In either case, if there are any Artillery or Stores at Billingsport, they should be immediately removed; as I find from a late Letter from you, that you have not a Sufficient Force to protect the Works that have been erected. I am, etc.<sup>33</sup>

## **To THE MASSACHUSETTS LEGISLATURE**

Head Quarters at Keith's, December 18, 1776.

Sir: I this Morning received the Honor of your favor of the 8th current, and beg leave to return your Honble. Council, my warmest acknowledgements for their early attention to my requisition, and assurances of support, such as shall be in their Power. Circumstances have varied much since I addressed you upon this subject, and being far removed myself from the rendezvous intended for this Reinforcement, when it was applied for; I have wrote to Major General Heath, to concert a Plan with Major General Lincoln and to form with him, such dispositions of the Troops as they may judge necessary and the exigencies of affairs require. Their arrival, I hope will be in due time and be attended with many important and happy consequences. Were it not for them, in a few days, by reason of the impolicy and fatal system of short inlistments, there would not be the least shadow of an Army, to check the operations of the Enemy.

33. The draft is in the writing of Tench Tilghman.

I should be happy if there had been just grounds for the report of the Success of our Arms at Hackensack; but Matters have been intirely the reverse. By the expiration of the Service of the Troops, denominated flying Camp Men, on the 1st Inst. and their return Home; our force on this side Hudsons River (which before that period was not competent to successful opposition) was reduced to a mere handful. With this small Number, without deriving the least aid from the Militia, notwithstanding the earliest and most pressing Applications, I have been pushed thro' Jersey, by the Main Body of the Enemy's Army; and for want of their Assistance, a large part of that state has been exposed to all the effects of Ravage, and of the most wanton Plunder. The Delaware now divides what remains of our little force, from that of Genl Howe; whose object, beyond all question, is to possess Philadelphia; they have been industrious in their efforts to procure Boats, for their transportation; but the precautions I have taken have hitherto rendered their attempts unsuccessful. How things will terminate, The Events I must leave to itself. As yet, I have received but little or no augmentation, except that of the City Militia, who have turned out in a spirited manner. Convinced that Philadelphia was the object of Mr Howe's movements and of the fatal Consequences that would attend the loss of it, I wrote for Genl. Lee to reinforce me, with the Troops under his immediate



Command. By some means or other, their Arrival has been retarded and unhappily on friday last, the Genl., having left his Division and proceeded three or four Miles nearer the Enemy, then

18.Miles from him; of which they were informed by some Tories, was surprised and carried off about 11 O'Clock, by a party of 70 Light Horse; I will not comment upon this unhappy accident; I feel much for his Misfortune and am sensible that in his Captivity, our Country has lost a Warm friend and an able officer. upon the whole our affairs are in a Much less promising condition than could be wished; Yet I trust, under the Smiles of Providence and by our own exertions, we shall be happy. Our cause is righteous, and must be Supported. Every nerve should be strained, to Levy the New Army. If we can but procure a respectable one in Season, All may be well, and to this end no pains can be too great. The next Campaign will be of importance and the Issue may lead to happiness or the most melancholly of all events. I have the honor to be &c.<sup>41</sup>

#### **To THE PENNSYLVANIA COUNCIL OF SAFETY**

Head Quarters, Bucks County, December 19, 1776.

Gentn.: I am favored with yours of the 17th, inclosing the Resolution of your Board, respecting the Militia of Bucks and Northampton Counties; I shall in consequence of it immediately order the Colonels, to summon their Regiments to attend upon a Certain day, and I shall treat the defaulters in the Manner pointed out by the Resolve, unless a good and sufficient Cause of Absence is assigned.

Nothing ever amazed me more, than the Note said to be

41. The draft is in the writing of Robert Hanson Harrison.

wrote by John Dickenson Esqr. to his Brother the General; if he applies to me to Shew him the Contents, I see no reason for refusing it, because he may easily be informed by applying to the Writer.<sup>43</sup> The Enemy having made no move of any Consequence, since I wrote to you last, I have only to recommend your Continuing to exert yourselves in Stirring up the Spirits of your people,

and making every necessary preparation for the defence of your City, while the Enemy leaves it in your Power to do it without Interruption. I have the Honor to be, etc.<sup>44</sup>

**To GOVERNOR JONATHAN TRUMBULL**

Head Quarters, Bucks County, December 21, 1776.

Sir: I am honored with your favors of the 7th and 12th of this Instant; The first chiefly relates to your Wishes, that the Troops of the State of Connecticut, whose time expires on the first of January, may, by intreaties and Promises of Reward, be induced to stay beyond their term. Past experience has repeatedly convinced us, that Troops, at the most favorable Season of the year and well supplied with every Necessary, cannot be prevailed upon to stay a day longer than what they engaged for; if that has been the case, under the Circumstances I have mentioned, it cannot be expected, that Men worn out with a fatiguing Campaign and in want of even necessary Cloathing, at the most inclement Season of the Year, will or can stay

43. Dickinson had written advising his brother, Brig. Gen. Philemon Dickinson, not to accept any Continental money in liquidation of bonds and mortgages and his letter had been intercepted. The text is printed in Force's *American Archives*, Series 5, vol. 3, 1255; an attested copy is in the *Washington Papers* under date of December, 1776.

44. The draft is in the writing of Tench Tilghman.

beyond their Engagement. Indeed, except they would enlist anew, or consent to stay a considerable time, I think they had better go home as fast as possible; for thereby, they will have time to have refreshed themselves, and when they have forgot their Fatigue, they will probably enlist again, time enough to take the field in the Spring.

I have felt for our unhappy prisoners, all that you express in yours of the 12th, and I have done all in my power to alleviate their distresses. Colo Miles procured a Supply of 8,000. Dollars from Congress to be laid out in Necessaries for them, which I hope would afford them some relief

in that respect; but whether Genl. Howe can accomodate them better in point of Room, I will not determine. To be sure he cannot safely trust them abroad in a Country which he has but just taken possession of. I have already sent in, all or most of the Prisoners that were in the States of Pennsylvania, Jersey and Maryland, and made a demand of such Officers in Exchange, as I thought were best intitled to a preference, begining with those taken at Quebec under Generals Montgomery and Arnold. But General Howe, without paying any regard to my requests, sent out such as best pleased him or who made the most urgent Application. I have remonstrated Sharply upon this Head, and told General Howe in Express Terms, that unless he will agree to send out such only as I name, I will not send any more of his Prisoners in; But to this Letter I have recd no Answer.

However, that we may loose no time in getting a total ex change carried into Execution, I would recommend it to you to send all those in your State, immediately to the Commanding

Officer of the British Troops at Rhode Island; taking Lists of the Names Corps and Ranks of the Officers and Number of the Privates, which lists must be Certified and Signed by the eldest prisoner Officer and sent in by him. One of these Lists to be immediately after transmitted to me, that I may make a demand of an equal Number, and a Line should be wrote by you, or some person deputed by you, to Genl. Howe, desiring him not to send any of our people out in Exchange for them till I make a Requisition.

When I reflect, upon what our Situation in this Quarter will be, in ten days from this time; I am almost led to despair. As I said before, I cannot count upon those Troops whose time is to expire upon the first of January. I am then left with a few Southern Regiments, almost reduced to Nothing by Sickness and Fatigue, to oppose the Main Body of General Howe's Army, laying close upon my front, and most assuredly waiting for the dissolution of our Army, to make as easy a Conquest of the province of Pennsylvania, as they have done of Jersey. I do not find the Militia of Pennsylvania inclined to give me as much Assistance, as they are able to do, were they willing; tho' I am endeavouring to bring them out by every Means, and am making use of both Threats and persuasions to gain my End. I shall draw the New inlisted Troops together as fast as they can be collected, armed and accoutred, but much cannot be expected from that Source for some time. If

the four Regiments of Militia from your State and the Six Thousand Men ordered in by the State of Massachusetts, should arrive at Peekskill, General Heath will have a much larger

Body of Men than he will have any occasion for at that Place, and I had determined that, they should cover the upper parts of Jersey, but under my present Difficulties, I shall order as many as can be spared, to proceed thus far. The Necessity of the times must plead my excuse for calling Men so far from home, and at this Season of the year, who have an Enemy just landed upon their own Coasts, and have not even a Continental Regiment to Assist them; but I trust they will undertake this Chearfully, when they reflect, that they cannot ensure that Liberty which they have so nobly contended for, while our Common Enemy Maintains any footing upon any part of this Continent. I have the honor to be &c.<sup>51</sup>

**To GOVERNOR NICHOLAS COOKE**

Camp above Trenton Falls, December 21, 1776.

Sir: I have been Honored with your favor of the 8th Inst. The loss of Rhode Island gives me much concern, tho' an Event that could not be well guarded against. I am happy, that most of the Stock had been removed, and wish the Cannon could have also been brought away, our want of them being great by reason of our late losses. Notwithstanding this descent, and the Intelligence of more Ships going down the Sound; I cannot persuade myself, that the Enemy will attempt any thing Capital upon the Main, they will most probably confine themselves to the Island; But if they have other views, I trust that the Succours from the two Neighbouring

51. The draft is in the writing of Tench Tilghman.

States, with your own force, will be able to baffle their most vigorous Efforts and prevent the progress of their Arms. It would give me infinite pleasure, if the situation of our Affairs in this Quarter would allow me to afford you the Assistance I could wish, but it will not. All in my power to do, I have done. Upon the first intelligence, that a fleet was going down the Sound with Troops on Board, I wrote to Genls. Spencer and Arnold to repair to the Eastward and to pursue such

measures as Circumstances should seem to require. My Letter to General Arnold did not get to hand, owing to the uncertainty of his route till he had almost reached this. He sets out to morrow Morning and I doubt not these two Gentlemen will render you many essential Services. In respect to the other aid, I cannot give you. The Delaware now divides our Small force from Genl Howe's Army, a large part of which is cantoned in the Neighbouring Towns, which from appearances and many concurring reports, is only waiting an Opportunity to pass. As soon as the Ice is formed, they will try to effect it; Genl. Howe's object, beyond all question is to possess Philadelphia and I could heartily wish, there was not too much ground for some disagreeable apprehensions on that Head. Without more Vigorous exertions on the part of the people, than what have appeared of late, I see but little to prevent him from accomplishing his purposes. In the course of a few days, the last of this Month, the force I now have by no means equal to his, will by the impolicy and fatal system of short enlistments be reduced to a mere handful; Unless the Militia can be prevailed on to give their Aid. As yet but very few,

those of the City excepted, have got in Motion, notwithstanding the most pressing solicitations and apparent intentions of the Enemy, to invade their State and seize their Capitol. How things will turn out the event must determine, at present the prospect is gloomy. I have the honor to be &c.

## **To THE MASSACHUSETTS LEGISLATURE**

Camp above Trenton Falls, December 21, 1776.

Sir:

\* \* \* \* \*<sup>52</sup>

52. The omitted portion of this letter is exactly the same as the entire letter to Governor Trumbull, Dec. 21, 1776, *q. v.*

The distresses of our Prisoners in the hands of the Enemy

gives me much Concern; their Sufferings by all accounts are extremely great. Ever since a Cartel was settled between Genl. Howe and myself, I have been endeavouring to effect an Ex change, as far as circumstances would admit of; but my attempts on this head have not been attended with but little Success. For those of their Prisoners, who were in the States of Jersey, Pennsylvania and Maryland and who have been sent in; Genl. Howe or rather his Commissary, has undertaken of his mere motion and contrary to my express requisition, to return a Number belonging to us, who were not called for and whose releasement, should have been postponed till after that of many others. I have wrote to Genl. Howe upon the Subject and presume in future, that none will be sent out but those who are named by me. That this Business may not remain an object of further delay, I would take the Liberty of recommending, that all the Prisoners in your State be immediately sent in to the Commanding officer of the British Troops at Rhode Island taking two exact lists of the names, Corps and Ranks of the Officers and the Number of Privates, signed by the officer of the highest rank; One to be sent in with him, accompanied by a line to Genl. Howe that the particular Prisoners belonging to us and to be received in exchange, will be required by me. The other List you will transmit me immediately, that I may make the requisition. I have the honor to be &c.<sup>53</sup>

53. This letter as printed in Force's *American Archives* has this additional paragraph: "It may be objected that the enemy's force, already formidable, should not be augmented; but the sufferings of our unfortunate people call for the exchange. The cartel has been agreed on and I am satisfied the [British] prisoners, when released and in arms against us, will not do us half the damage they would were they to continue. The influence of those who have gone from hence has been attended with the most injurious and pernicious effects." The draft is in the writing of Robert Hanson Harrison. Precisely the same letter, but without the preceding paragraph, was sent to the New Hampshire Legislature.

## **To THE PENNSYLVANIA COUNCIL OF SAFETY**

Head Quarters, Buck County, December 22, 1776.

Gentn.: I am honored with yours of the 18th and 20th. I am of opinion with you, that the Ships which made their appearance in Delaware Bay, never intended to come up; unless to create a diversion below, and thereby draw your attention from the upper part of the River. But I hope the Weather will soon rid you of all apprehensions of an attack by Water, for a time to come.

Your Collection of old Cloathes for the use of the Army, de serves my warmest thanks; they are of the greatest use and shall be distributed where they are most wanted. I think if the Committee or some proper persons were appointed to go thro' the County of Bucks and make a Collection of Blankets &c., in the manner you have done in Philadelphia, it would be better than doing it in a Military Way by me; for many people, who would be willing to contribute or sell, if asked so to do by their Neighbours or Acquaintances, feel themselves hurt when the demand is made, backed by an Armed force. But I would at the same time remark, that if any, who can spare without inconvenience, refuse to do it, I would immediately give proper Assistance to take from them.

I have not a Musket to furnish the Militia who are without Arms; this demand upon me makes it necessary to remind you, that it will be needless for those to come down who have no Arms, except they will consent to work upon the Fortifications instead of taking their Tour of Military Duty; if they will do that,

they may be most usefully employed. I would recommend to you to call in as many Men as can be got, for the express purpose of Working for we shall most undoubtedly have occasion for every Man who can procure or bear a Musket. In less than ten Days from this time, my Army will be reduced to a few Virginia and one Maryland Regiment, Colo. Hand's and the Regiments lately under Colo. Miles, all very thin; The Enemy are most assuredly waiting for that Crisis, and except I am strongly reinforced by Militia, nothing can hinder them from reaching Philadelphia: I would therefore intreat you, to Collect every Man you possibly can, Send people out to contradict the reports that are circulated, that we have more Men than we want; from which, many perhaps that would turn out, if they thought there was a real necessity, remain at home.

I have ordered the Militia of this County to meet on the 28th and March to Philadelphia, that of Northampton as soon as possible and have directed the Colonels to make me a Return of those who refuse to appear.

It is necessary that, as the Militia come in, they should make a Return of their Numbers to Genl. Putnam; be kind enough to inform the Officers of this, and direct them to do it. Colo. Biddle<sup>61</sup> has given directions to Major Mifflin<sup>62</sup> to discharge all the Waggon's not wanted for the removal of Stores, as we have a Sufficiency for the Army here. I am &c.<sup>63</sup>

61. Lieut. Col. Clement Biddle. He was deputy quartermaster general of the Flying Camp; Commissary General of Forage of the Continental Army from July, 1777, to June, 1780; colonel and quartermaster general of Pennsylvania from September, 1781, to the close of the war.

62. Jonathan Mifflin, brigade major of Mifflin's brigade. He was paymaster of the Fifth Pennsylvania Regiment; Deputy Quartermaster General from June, 1777, to 1781.

63. The draft is in the writing of Tench Tilghman. The letter sent, also in Tilghman's writing, is in the archives of the Historical Society of Pennsylvania.

**To LEWIS GORDON<sup>64</sup>**

Head Quarters, Bucks County, December 22, 1776.

Sir: The Council of Safety for this State, have by their Resolve of the 17th. Instt. impowred me, to call out the Militia of the County of Northampton, to the Assistance of the Continental Army under my Command; that by our joint endeavours, we may put a stop to the Progress of the Enemy, who are making preparations to advance to Philadelphia, as soon as they can Cross the Delaware either by Boats or upon the Ice. As I am unacquainted with the Names of the Colonels of your Militia, I have taken the Liberty to inclose you Six Letters, in which you will please to insert the Names of the proper Officers and send them immediately to them, by persons in whom you can con fide



for the Delivery. If there are not as many Colonels as Letters you may destroy those that are not wanted. I most earnestly intreat you Sir, and the rest of the Gentleman of your Committee, to exert your influence among the people of the County and endeavour to make them turn out generally, in defence of their Capital; which will most assuredly fall a Sacrifice, unless the Militia of the Province contribute Largely to its defence. Those who are so far lost to a love of their Country, as to refuse to lend a hand to its support, at this critical time, may depend upon being treated, as their baseness and want of Public Spirit, will most justly deserve. I am, etc.

P.S. please to make me a return of the Names of the different Colonels.<sup>65</sup>

64. Chairman of the Northampton County, Pa., committee of safety at Easton.

65. The draft is in the writing of Tench Tilghman.

#### **To THE PENNSYLVANIA COUNCIL OF SAFETY**

Morristown, January 8, 1777.

Gentn.: I have been honored with your several Letters of the 3d. and 5th; and return you my thanks for your kind attention to the wants of the Army and endeavours to supply them; nor am I less obliged, by your notice of the Eclipse of the Sun, which is to happen to morrow; This event, without a previous knowledge, might affect the minds of the Soldiery and be attended with some bad Consequences.

The various important Concerns, to which I am obliged to turn my attention, have prevented me from transmitting you the Intelligence I wished to have done. The Manoeuvre from Trenton, has been attended with happy effects; The evacuation of that, as well as Princeton, by the Enemy, who are now at Brunswick and the Posts below. I cannot enter upon a Minute and particular detail of the affair; and shall only add, that, in the Action, they must have lost Five hundred Men in killed, Wounded, and prisoners, besides the Stores they had in Princeton. Our loss in Slain is 6 or 7 Officers and about 25 or 30 Privates; the Number of Wounded is not ascertained; but in this list

is the brave and Worthy Genl. Mercer, who is made prisoner. he was reported to be dead; but, from the last intelligence from Princeton, he was alive, and there were hopes of his doing well. I intended to have proceeded from Princeton to the Surprize of Brunswick, but was prevented by the arrival of the Enemy at the former, in their return from Trenton, before our Men had an Opportunity of resting themselves, or getting the least refreshment, after their

fatiguing and hasty march. There have been two or three small Skirmishes since, between some of their Parties and those of the Militia of this State, in which the latter have been successful and made a few Prisoners. The most considerable was on Sunday Morning when 8 or 10 Waldeckers were killed and wounded, and two Officers and 39 or 40. privates taken, by a Party not superior in number and without receiving the least damage. I am etc.<sup>65</sup>

**To THE PENNSYLVANIA COUNCIL OF SAFETY**

Morris Town, January 10, 1777.

Gentn: I have appointed Capt. Francis Wade to collect a quantity of Provisions (particularly Pork) in and about the Towns of Allentown, Crosswix &c. &c. and store the same at Newtown, Bucks County in Pensylvania. A quantity of Salt will be necessary to cure the Pork, which I must desire you to furnish from time to time, as the demand may arise. Your Compliance will greatly benefit the Service, as it will enable us to remove the Provisions out of the Enemy's way and form a necessary Magazine for ourselves. I am etc.<sup>84</sup>

**To GOVERNOR JONATHAN TRUMBULL**

Head Quarters, Morris Town, January 10, 1777.

Sir: I am honored with your favor of the 23d of last Month.

65. The draft is in the writing of Robert Hanson Harrison.

84. This letter was written and signed by Gen. Nathanael Greene by order of Washington. This phraseology was afterwards deleted and the revised letter, as above, signed by the Commander in Chief.

I hope the Congress have, in consequence of your Application, ordered up a Supply of Money for the bounty to the New in listed Troops in your State; but least they should not have done it, I shall order Col. Palfrey to send what Cash he can spare, to the Deputy Paymaster at Peekskill, to be applied to the use of the recruiting Service to the Eastward. He, some little time ago, sent 150,000 Dollars to Peekskill, to be distributed by Genl. Heath among the recruiting Officers; if that Sum should not be expended, some Money may be drawn from thence; in the mean time, I must beg the favor of you, to advance the Necessary Sums, out of the Treasury of your State, assuring you it shall be refunded as early as possible.

I am very happy to hear that your Assembly have it in Contemplation to send a Body of Troops forward, to serve till your regular inlistments can be compleated. Nothing can be more distressing to the Enemy or serviceable to me, than an Army hanging upon the rear of New York, or move [sic] forward as Circumstances may require. Their Wishes and Views are certainly towards Philadelphia and valuable as the acquisition of that City would be; it would be paying too dear a price for it, were they to give up New York to a force that might be thrown into it, after their Army had moved Southward.

Our Success at Trenton, has been followed by another lucky Blow at Princetown on the 3d Inst—I lay with about five thou sand Men at Trenton, the Enemy advanced a Superior force down upon me from Princetown on the 2d; not choosing to risque an Engagement there, I decamped as soon as it was dark, and marched along their flank

to Princeton which lay directly in their rear. I arrived there about break of day and found three Regiments of British Troops, ready drawn up to march to Trenton, we immediately attacked them and in a short time put them compleatly to the rout.

We have already taken 300 prisoners and the Country People are daily bringing in Straglers; their loss upon the whole will amount to at least 500.

The Enemy confounded at this unexpected Stroke in their rear and fearing that their Baggage at Brunswick would fall into our Hands, marched back in the Greatest hurry from Trenton to Brunswick, where their Main Body now lays. They have Called in all their out Posts, so that their late Possession of the greatest part of Jersey is reduced to the Compass of a very few Miles. These Successes, tho' Comparatively small, have greatly inspirited the Inhabitants of this State and Pennsylvania, and I am in great hopes, if we can once put the Enemy into Winter Quarters and get some Little leisure, that our affairs may be put in such a train and upon such a footing, as will ensure success the next Campaign. I have the Honor to be &c.<sup>85</sup>

**\*To THE SELECTMEN OF THE TOWN OF BOSTON**

Morris Town, January 12, 1777.

Gentn.: The Inclosed will give you the full scope of my design; if Colo. Jackson does not Incline to accept the appointment I must request the favour of you to give it with the same powers to some other fit Person.<sup>20</sup> Time will not admit of the Matters being refer'd

85. The draft is in the writing of Tench Tilghman.

20. Jackson accepted. The regiment was raised and its designation changed to the Sixteenth Massachusetts Regiment July 23, 1780.

back; as I hope to see the Men in the Field in almost as short a space as it would take to negotiate the affair in a case of a disappointment. I am, etc.

**To WILLIAM DUER**

Head Quarters, Morris Town, January 14, 1777.

Dear Sir: I some time ago received advice, that a large parcel of Cloathing was forwarded from New England to Peekskill, with an intent to come on to this Army.

I could not account for its being delayed there, until I was just now informed by the Quarter Master General, that the Convention of your State had appropriated 26. Bales of it to their own use, without consulting him in the least. This I look upon as a most extraordinary piece of Conduct, and what involves me just at this time in the greatest difficulties; for depending upon that Cloathing, I have not applied elsewhere and the Troops in the Field are now absolutely perishing for want of it.

I have therefore to desire, that what is not made use of, may be immediately forwarded to me, and that in future not the least Article may be stopped upon the Way, without giving me due Notice, that I may know how to regulate myself.

I dont doubt, but your Troops were in want of Cloathing; but Consider they were in Comfortable Barracks, while ours are Marching over Frost and Snow, many without a Shoe, Stocking or Blanket.<sup>22</sup> I am etc.<sup>23</sup>

22. The New York Committee of Safety answered this letter (January 22), explained the transaction, and assured Washington that no supplies of any kind would be interfered with. The committee's letter is in the *Washington Papers*.

23. The draft is in the writing of Tench Tilghman.

## **To THE PENNSYLVANIA COUNCIL OF SAFETY**

Head Quarters, Morris Town, January 19, 1777.

Gentn.: The readiness which the Militia of Pennsylvania have shewn by engaging in the Service of their Country, at an inclement Season of the year, when my Army was reduced to an handful of Men, and our affairs in the most Critical Situation, does great honor to them and to your State. But altho' they have contributed greatly to the Success, which has lately attended our Arms, I must

inform you, that with pain I hear they have determined to return home. Most of the City Militia have determined to stay some days longer; they must then be discharged, as I am well informed they are generally in want of almost every Necessary. I must depend chiefly this Winter on the Militia, to enable me to act offensively, or even to make a Stand, and therefore sincerely wish, they could have been prevailed upon to serve, 'till they could have been relieved by the Troops now raising by the Continent. There now is the fairest Opportunity of totally destroying the British Army, or at least of delaying their Operations in the Spring, 'till we may be prepared to oppose them by regular Forces. As it is a Matter of the highest Importance, that your Militia should be put on such a footing, as willfully answer the Exigency of our affairs at this time, I do most earnestly recommend, That such Spirited and effectual Measures be adopted as will soonest accomplish this great and Necessary Work. As there is not the least doubt at present, that the principle Object of the Enemy is to get Possession of the City of Philadelphia, it is absolutely necessary, that

every Person able to bear Arms (except such as are Conscientiously scrupulous against it in every Case), should give their personal Service, and whenever a part of the Militia is required only, either to join the Army or find a Man in their place. In order to effect this, I beg you will order the whole Militia of your State to be enrolled and compleatly equipp'd; that one half at least may proceed to join the Army with all possible expedition. Those who have done their tour of Duty already to be excused; But those that have not should be obliged to come forth or hire a proper person in their Place, and to remain till the first of April, unless sooner discharged, by the Commander in Chief. You may be assured, that nothing but the United Efforts of every State in America can Save us from Disgrace and too probably from Ruin. The Army is much reduced since we left Trenton, and the Many that will be discharged in a few days, will so weaken our force, that it will be impossible to oppose the Enemy with Success, should they advance towards us; or do any essential Service, if they should move towards Philadelphia. As I cannot expect our Situation can long be a Secret to the Enemy, There is no doubt, but they will avail themselves of it, and take the Advantage of our Weakness. When any of your Militia are coming forward, I beg you will inform them, that the time, for which they engage to Serve, is to begin when they join the Army. The want of a Regular, well established Government in your State, has 'greatly obstructed the Public Service; I therefore

recommend that some Authority be immediately exerted to draw forth your whole Strength. I have the honor etc.<sup>61</sup>

61. The draft is in the writing of George Johnston and Tench Tilghman.

**To GOVERNOR NICHOLAS COOKE**

Morris Town, January 20, 1777.

Sir: I am exceeding sorry to hear that your State have ordered several Battalions to be raised for the defence of the State only, and this before proper Measures are taken to fill the Continental Regiments. You cannot be insensible how unequal any one State is, unconnected with the others, to defend itself; if the Enemy makes a descent against it, with any considerable part of their force: Neither have you the least reason to think, you would derive less protection from the Troops, if they were raised upon the Continent's Account, than that of the State. If each State was to prepare for its own defence, independent of each other, they would all be soon conquered, one by one. Our Success must depend upon a firm Union and a strict adherence to the General plan. other Measures may produce a partial relief, but never can remove the principal Evil.

You must be sensible the Season is fast approaching, when a new Campaign will open; nay, the former is not yet closed, neither do I intend it shall, unless the Enemy quits the Jerseys. It is of the last importance to the interest of America, that the New Regiments be speedily levied. It will give me an Opportunity, in the fore part of the Campaign, before the Enemy can Collect their force, or receive any reinforcement from home, to give them a fatal Stab. Such a blow, in the forepart of the Season, might terminate the Campaign to great Advantage. I am sure the Necessity of having the Continental Regiments immediately

compleated, are too Obvious to need any further Arguments.—I hope the Powers of Government are such, as to Compleat the New Levies by draught, if they cannot be fill'd Seasonably by Voluntary inlistments. Necessity obliges me to Call upon you, as I shall upon every other State, in the most pressing terms, to compleat without delay your proportion of the Eighty Eight

Battalions.<sup>82</sup> I am Confident the raising the two Regiments at the Expence of the State, before the Continental Regiments are Compleat, can answer no valuable purpose. If the Enemy make a descent upon Rhode Island, with any Considerable force, the opposition of two Regiments will be inconsiderable. If they only infest the Coast with their Ships, the Militia would answer a much better purpose and at a far less expence. I must confess I am ignorant of the Reasons that induced the Assembly to adopt the Measure; Neither can I conceive of the use and Policy of the Scheme.

I wish it may not be productive of more injury than benefit, by introducing innovations and changes that must retard the filling the Continental Regiments and Consequently, prejudice the general Interest, which every State must have an Eye to; and the obligation on you is Stronger than any one else, being the most exposed and the least capable of Making a seperate defence.

Our affairs here are in a very prosperous train, within a Month past, in several engagements with the Enemy, we have kill'd, wounded and taken Prisoners between 2.000 and 3.000 Men. I am very confident the Enemy's loss here will oblige them to

82. By resolve of Congress (Sept. 16, 1776) 88 battalions were to be raised for service during the continuance of the war. The quotas (battalions) assigned each State were: New Hampshire, 3; Massachusetts, 15; Rhode Island, 2; Connecticut, 8; New York, 4; New Jersey, 4; Pennsylvania, 12; Delaware, 1; Maryland, 8; Virginia, 15; North Carolina, 9; South Carolina, 6; Georgia, 1.

recall their force from your State. If I am properly supported, I hope to close the Campaign Gloriously for America. I have the honor etc.<sup>83</sup>

**To GOVERNOR WILLIAM LIVINGSTON**

Head Quarters, Morris Town, January 24, 1777.

Sir: The irregular and disjointed State of the Militia of this Province, makes it necessary for me to inform you, that, unless a Law is immediately passed by your Legislature, to reduce them to some order, and oblige them to turn out, in a different Manner from what they have hitherto done,



we shall bring very few into the Field, and even those few will render little or no Service. Their Officers are generally of the lowest Class of People; and, instead of setting a good Example to their Men, are leading them into every Kind of Mischief, one Species of which is, Plundering the Inhabitants, under pretence of their being Tories. A Law should, in my Opinion, be passed, to put a Stop to this kind of lawless Rapine; for, unless there is something done to prevent it, the People will throw themselves, of Choice, into the Hands of the British Troops. But your first object should be a well regulated Militia Law; the People, put under good Officers, would behave in quite another Manner; and not only render real Service as Soldiers, but would protect, instead of distressing, the Inhabitants. What I would wish to have particularly insisted upon, in the New Law, should be, that every Man, capable of bearing Arms, should be obliged to turn out, and not buy off his Service by a

83. The draft is in the writing of John Walker.

trifling fine. We want Men, and not Money. I have the honor to be, etc.<sup>99</sup>

## **To GOVERNOR JONATHAN TRUMBULL**

Head Quarters, Morris Town, January 24, 1777.

Sir: I received your several favors of the 12th and 14th Inst. by Lieutenant Fellows,<sup>1</sup> to whom I granted a Flag with a Letter to Genl Howe, desiring that his Brother Capt. Fellows might be one of the first Officers exchanged. I have remonstrated very sharply with Genl. Howe upon his Treatment of our prisoners and I hope it will be attended with good Effects. I have repeatedly endeavoured, to procure the Enlargement of Col Ethan Allen, but none of my propositions were ever accepted of. The Reason I cannot tell.

I have wrote pressinglly to Congress, to forward on Money to the Eastward for the Recruiting Service, and shall direct Mr. Mease who is appointed Cloathier General to the Army, and who is expected here every day; to allot a proportion of the Cloathes taken, and purchased for the Continent, to each State.

I observe, that you have advanced Col Sheldon Ten thousand Pounds lawful Money, for which you desire my draft on the Commissioner of the Loan Office; I would not hesitate to do this, If I had recd. any Authority from Congress, to impower me to draw upon that fund; I will write to them respecting it, and if they grant me liberty, I will immediately transmit you a proper draft. I refer you to a

99. The draft is in the writing of Tench Tilghman.

1. Of Chapmans Connecticut Militia regiment.

particular Letter of this date concerning the Expediency of forwarding the New Levies, and subscribe myself, with great Esteem, Sir, etc.<sup>2</sup>

## **CIRCULAR TO THE NEW ENGLAND STATES**

Morris Town, January 24, 1777.

Sir: The situation to which I am reduced for want of a regular Body of Troops on whom I can depend for a length of time, makes it indispensably necessary, for me to call upon you, and intreat you, to exert yourselves in levying and equipping the Number of Battalions allotted to your State by the Resolution of Congress in September last. You must be fully sensible of the hardship imposed upon individuals, and how detrimental it must be to the Public, to have her Farmers and her Tradesman frequently called into the Field as Militia Men; whereby a total stop is put to Arts and Agriculture, without which, we Cannot possibly long subsist. But great as this inconvenience is, we must put up with it, or submit to a greater, the total Loss of our Liberties, until our regular Continental Army can be brought into the Field. The above reasons alone, I hope will be sufficient, to induce you to exert yourselves; for if our new Army are not ready to take the Field early in the Spring, we shall loose all the Advantages, which I may say, we have providentially gained this Winter. while our dependence is upon Militia, we have a full Army one day and scarce any the next, and I am much afraid, that the Enemy one day or other,

2. The draft is in the writing of Tench Tilghman.

taking advantage of one of these temporary weaknesses, will make themselves Masters of our Magazines of Stores, Arms and Artillery. Nothing but their Ignorance of our Numbers protects us at this very time, when on the Contrary, had we Six or Eight thousand regular Troops, or could the Militia who were with me a few days ago, have been prevailed upon to stay, we could have struck such a Stroke as would have inevitably ruined the Army of the Enemy, in their divided State.

I am not without hopes, that by creating a Powerful diversion on the Side of New York, we may still keep their Force divided, between that Province and this; if so, and a good Body of regular Troops could be thrown into me, before the Roads will be in a Condition for the Enemy, (with their reduced Waggon and Artillery Horses) to move out, it perhaps may not be out of my power to strike a decisive Blow before Spring. This is another, and a forcible reason, to induce you to send your new Levies forward with all expedition. While the Men are raising, I beg you will spare no pains to make a collection of all things necessary for their Equipment; not only with such as they can Carry with them into the Field, but for their use and convenience while they are there, such as spare Shoes, Stockings and Shirts; the want of which has been the ruin of the Old Army. If these Articles are provided and put into the hands of the Regimental Quar. Master, they can always be delivered out when wanted, and Stoppages made by the Paymasters. I expect the Cloathier General will be with the Army

in a few days, when I shall give him directions to allot a proportion of the Cloathing lately taken, and purchased for the Public, to each State. I have the honor etc.<sup>4</sup>

**To ROBERT OGDEN<sup>5</sup>**

Morris Town, January 24, 1777.

Sir: You would do me Injustice if you Supposed, that the Appointment of Col Lowrey to the post of D.C. Genl. proceeded from any other Cause than Necessity.<sup>6</sup> I was retarded from Crossing the

Delaware two days; and when over, was forced, for want of a Sufficient quantity of Provisions, to permit the Troops to victual themselves where they could. No Time therefore was to be lost, in removing so great an Inconvenience, in which I have succeeded since Colo Lowry undertook the Business. It ever was disagreeable to me to remove any Gentleman from Office, and I beg that I may be excused when the public good requires it. I am, etc.

P.S. I do not interfere with any person appointed by Colo Lowry in this Business, He is answerable to me, consequently may employ whom he pleases.<sup>7</sup>

4. The draft is in the writing of Tench Tilghman.

5. Deputy commissary general in New Jersey.

6. Ogden had written to Washington (January 18) regarding the appointment of Col. Thomas Lowrey as Deputy Commissary General. On January 24, also, Washington wrote a line or two to Col. John Patton asking him to appoint Walter Cruise to some position in his regiment. Congress had made such a request of Washington by a resolve of January 13. These letters are in the *Washington Papers*.

7. The draft is in the writing of George Johnston.

**To MAJOR APOLLOS MORRIS<sup>35</sup>**

Morris Town, January 29, 1777.

Sir: I have your favor of the 28th, with Copy of a Letter, addressed to Genl. Howe, inclosed. your wish to be the Instrument of restoring peace, to a much Oppressed and more injured People, is certainly most laudable; but you must very well know that this is not to be effected by the Interposition of any Person in a private Character, and Lord and General Howe have refused to Negotiate with the only great Representative Body of this Continent.

If, therefore, your Letter had gone in to General Howe, it must have been merely, as one to satisfy yourself in regard to the Powers that were intrusted to the Commissioners; as to myself, I am fully satisfied that they never exceeded the express Words of the Act of Parliament; for if they did, they are answerable for the Blood that has been spilled, perhaps in Consequence of their not making them known to the only Body that could receive them.

If I had never been made acquainted with the Substance of your Letter, I should not have had the least Objection to its going in; but as you have Submitted it to my inspection, my permitting it to pass, may be construed into an Approbation of its Contents.

I am therefore under the necessity of objecting to it, least I should be thought to delegate that Power to others, which I do not possess myself, I mean, that of Negotiation, in this great dispute. I should not have detained your Express so long, but I was from home when he arrived. I am, etc.<sup>36</sup>

I return you the Letter for Genl. Howe.

35. Formerly in the British Army.

36. The draft is in the writing of Tench Tilghman.

## **To THE PENNSYLVANIA COUNCIL OF SAFETY**

Head Quarters, Morris Town, January 29, 1777.

Gentn.: I have the Honor of yours of the 23d. and I return you my thanks for your Exertions, not only in calling forth and equipping the Militia of your State; but for the Assistance you have afforded to the Militia of the other States and to the Continental Troops, in their passage thro' the City, to join the Army.

If some Mode is not adopted, for obliging the Officers of the Militia to return the Arms and Accoutrements that are lent to them, we shall be in the greatest want of them, when the regular

Regiments are raised. I have lately taken the liberty, to make them leave their public Arms and Accoutrements here, upon their being discharged, and have given the Officers Receipts for what were delivered up; with which they may cancel the receipts given at Philadelphia. My Reason was this, I know very well, that the Men, when discharged, instead of returning by the way of Philadelphia, take the nearest road home, and consequently either drop their Arms by the way, or carry them with them, by which means they are lost to the public Stock; If there is any deficiency between the receipt and delivery, the Officer should be obliged to Account for it.

I am glad to find, that your House of Assembly are about framing a law, to make your Militia turn out more generally; till that is done, the Service falls particularly upon a few individuals; who complain, with great Justice, of risking their lives in defence of those who upon your present plan, do not even make a pecuniary

Satisfaction for the exemption of their persons. But I would wish to see every Man (who is not really conscientiously scrupulous) obliged to turn out, when the good of his Country demands it. For we now want Men more than Money.

I wish it was in my power to procure the Release of all our prisoners, the Field Officers in particular; but when we have not those of equal Rank to propose for them, what is to be done? Col. Miles Signified to me, that Mr. Foxcroft would be accepted in Exchange for him; I immediately proposed the Matter to Genl. Howe, but have never reed. any Answer. Colo Atlee also desired me to propose him in exchange for some Gentleman whose name I have forgot, this I did, but the matter rested in the same Manner. Of the prisoners that have been released, by far the greatest proportion were from Pennsylvania, and least there should be some jealousy on that Account, I directed, that in future, whenever an Exchange took place, there should be a due proportion of those, belonging to the Eastern States, set at liberty.

I am sorry that so deserving an Officer as Colo. Johnson,<sup>37</sup> should be overlook'd by any Mistake of yours, but it is not at present in my power to do any thing for him. I have Commissioned as many

of the Additional Regiments, as I think there is any chance of filling, without interfering with each other in the recruiting Service. I am etc.<sup>38</sup>

37. Lieut. Col, James Johnston, of the Pennsylvania Militia.

38. The draft is in the writing of Tench Tilghman.

### **To THE PENNSYLVANIA COUNCIL OF SAFETY**

Head Quarters, Morris Town, January 31, 1777.

Gentn.: As the times of a Number of the Continental Artillerymen have expired, that department is left very bare. Major Proctor<sup>40</sup> informs me that there are about one hundred and forty of his Corps now doing duty at the Forts upon Delaware; but as there is not the least probability of their being wanted during the Winter Season, I beg you will immediately detach, at least One hundred of those Men to put themselves under the Command of Major Proctor; If one hundred men cannot be spared, you will be pleased to send as many as you possibly can. I am &c.<sup>41</sup>

### **CIRCULAR LETTER TO THE STATES<sup>42</sup>**

Head Quarters, Morris Town, January 31, 1777.

The great Countenance and protection shewn and given to deserters, by persons in the different Neighbourhoods, from whence they originally came, has made that Vice so prevalent in the Army, that unless some very effectual Measures are fallen upon to prevent it, our new Army will scarcely be raised; before it will again dwindle and waste away from that Cause alone.

I know of no remedy, so effectual, as for the different States immediately to pass Laws, laying a very severe penalty upon those who harbour or fail to give information against deserters, knowing them to be such, and strictly enjoining all Justices of the

40. Maj. Thomas Procter, of the Pennsylvania Artillery.

41. The draft is in the writing of Tench Tilghman.

42. This was sent to all the States except South Carolina and Georgia.

Peace and Officers of Militia to keep a watchful Eye over and apprehend all such persons as shall return from the Army without a Discharge. In order that this most Salutary Measure may be carried speedily into execution, I have not only desired Congress to recommend it to the different States, but have myself wrote Circular Letters to them all pressing their compliance with my request. Desertion must cease of course, when the Offenders find that they have no Shelter. I have the Honor to be &c.<sup>43</sup>

43. The draft is in the writing of Tench Tilghman.

## **To GOVERNOR JONATHAN TRUMBULL**

Head Quarters, Morris Town, February 1, 1777.

Sir: I have the pleasure of yours of the 23d Janry. by Major Wyllys and thank you for your Congratulations upon our late Successes, which have been attended with very happy Consequences; as the Enemy have remained very quiet at Brunswick and Amboy, since the Affair at Princetown.

I have wrote to Congress in a very pressing Manner, not only to send on a present Supply of Money, but to forward the Checque Books and loan Tickets with the greatest Expedition.

I most sincerely wish, it were in my power to procure the immediate Release of all our Officers and Soldiers who have been so unfortunate as to fall into the hands of our Enemies; but when the chance of War has turned the Scale against us, in point of Numbers, what more can be done, than to give those a preference who have longest endured Captivity. That I might avoid any imputation of partiality, for the Officers of any particular State; I have in all my Letters to General Howe and



to Mr. Loring the Commissary of Prisoners, directed an equal proportion of officers of the Eastern and Southern States, to be sent out. But without paying any regard to my request, they have given Pennsylvania more than her proportion, having never discharged one of the Maryland Officers taken upon Long Island. Major Meigs<sup>46</sup> and Capt. Hanchet<sup>47</sup> are already released. We have no General Officer to propose for General Waterbury<sup>48</sup> and if we had, General Thompson,<sup>49</sup> who was taken long before, has a

46. Maj. Return Jonathan Meigs, of the Second Connecticut Regiment. He had been taken prisoner at Quebec Dec. 31, 1775; was exchanged Jan. 10, 1777; made lieutenant colonel of Sherburne's Additional Continental regiment Feb. 22, 1777; presented with a sword by act of Congress July 25, 1777, for valor in an enterprise on Long Island, N.Y., in May, 1777; promoted to colonel of the Sixth Connecticut Regiment May 12, 1777; retired Jan. 1, 1781.

47. Capt. Oliver Hanchet, of the Second Connecticut Regiment. He had been taken prisoner at Quebec Dec. 31, 1775; exchanged Jan. 10, 1777.

48. Brig. Gen. David Waterbury, of the Connecticut State troops. He had been taken prisoner at Valcours Island in October, 1776; was not exchanged until October, 1780.

49. Brig. Gen. William Thompson, of the Pennsylvania State troops.

preference. If General Howe does not accede to the proposals of Congress, for giving up all the Hessian Field Officers taken at Trenton for Genl Lee; Major Wells<sup>50</sup> and Lieut. Col. Heart,<sup>51</sup> will probably come in for their turn of Exchange. You, by your return have sent in but three Captains, and I have convinced Major Wylls<sup>52</sup> (who ranks as Captain) that I cannot propose him for one of those, without doing injustice to Capt. Dearborn,<sup>53</sup> who was taken at Quebec the 31st December 1775, and Capts. Trowbridge<sup>54</sup> and Percival<sup>55</sup> taken the 27th August last upon Long Island. You mention the Names of several Subalterns who were taken upon York and Long Island, whose Release you would wish, but there are yet Eight Gentlemen taken at Quebec, who have a right to a

preference. By my State of the Exchange of Prisoners, a Captain is still due to us, if there should be, I have desired Major Wyllys may be accepted for him.

I have made a proposition to Genl Howe, which if he accepts, will give great relief to our Prisoners; It is the Establishment of an Agent, to reside at New York, to see that the prisoners are well used, and to Supply them with Necessaries.

I should have had no Objection to appointing Colo. Root<sup>56</sup> to the Command of a Regiment, could it Possibly be raised upon the Terms allowed by Congress, which is upon a Bounty of twenty Dollars; but by your State and that of the Massachusetts, having given an additional Bounty of 33 # Dollars, not a man can be raised, till the Eight Regiments allotted to your State are full. I have, I may say, unfortunately given Seven of the additional Regiments to Gent. of New England, and I was under the strongest hopes, that they

50. Maj. Levi Wells, of the Twenty-second Continental Infantry. He had been taken prisoner at Long Island, N.Y., Aug. 27, 1776; was not exchanged until Dec. 9, 1777; served as colonel of Connecticut Militia; was again taken prisoner at Horseneck, Conn., Dec. 9, 1780.

51. Lieut. Col. Selah Heart, of Gay's Connecticut State regiment. He had been taken prisoner on the retreat from New York; was exchanged in March, 1777; served as brigadier general of Connecticut Militia from 1779 to the close of the war.

52. John Plasgrave Wyllys. He had been brigade major to General Wadsworth; was captain in Webb's Additional Continental regiment Jan. 1, 1777; had been taken prisoner on the retreat from New York.

53. Capt. Henry Dearborn, of the First New Hampshire Regiment. He was taken prisoner at Quebec Dec. 31, 1775.

54. Capt. Caleb Trowbridge, of the Seventeenth Continental Infantry. He was wounded and taken prisoner at Long Island, N.Y., Aug. 27, 1776; died two days later. Washington was unaware of this.

55. Capt. Timothy Percival, of the Seventeenth Continental Infantry. lie had been taken prisoner on Long Island, N.Y., Aug. 27, 1776.

56. Col. Aaron Root, of the Massachusetts Militia.

would from their Influence, have soon filled their Regiments; But I cannot suppose that Men will inlist for a Bounty of Twenty Dollars with them, when they can get 531/3 from the State. I have the honor etc.<sup>57</sup>

## **To THE MASSACHUSETTS LEGISLATURE**

Head Quarters, Morris Town, February 1, 1777.

Sir: I was a few days ago honored with your favors of the 4th and 17th last Month. I cannot but think, that altho' your inducements for granting an additional Bounty to the Troops to be furnished by your State, were certainly meant to serve the Cause; that you will find them most prejudicial in the End. One reason will be, that by your departing from the Bounty prescribed by Congress, the Troops in the other States will be discontented, upon hearing of this; unless they receive the same; and another and a more forcible one, that none of the New England Colos. whom I have appointed to the Command of any of the Sixteen additional Regiments, can possibly raise a Man, until the Number of Regiments allotted by Congress are full, and this, not because there are not Men enough, but because they cannot grant the same Bounty. Of the Sixteen additional Regiments, I had conferred Seven upon Gentlemen of New England; All Men of Influence, and who had given the highest proofs of their Bravery and good Conduct during the whole course of the War; and as they were very careful in the Choice of their Officers I had the highest Expectation from

57. The draft is in the writing of Tench Tilghman.

their Corps. But they write me they cannot get Men for 20 dollars, when the State allows 53 #. Thus you see, Sir, to what a dilemma I am reduced by this departure of the four Eastern Governments from the line marked out by Congress; I must either give up Seven Regiments or I must grant them

the Bounty of 53# dollars. If I grant it to them, the remaining 97 Battallions of Foot the Regiments of Artillery and of Horse will put in their claim for the same or justly complain of partiality.

I will communicate the hint, given in the Extract of the Letter which you inclosed to me, to General Schuyler and will recommend it to him to improve it if he finds an opportunity.<sup>58</sup>

I would have you by all means to attend to the compleating of the Fortifications in the Harbour of Boston, and I hope we shall in time render most of our great towns as inaccessible to their Ships, as the interior parts of our Country are to their Army. I have the Honor etc.<sup>59</sup>

**\*To GOVERNOR NICHOLAS COOKE**

Morris Town, February 2, 1777.

Sir: In a Letter which I did myself the honour of writing to you on the 20th Ult., I could not help expressing my Sentiments of the Impropriety, as it appeared to me, of raising Troops on a Colonial establishment and thereby setting up a kind of seperate

58. See Washington's letter to Maj. Gen. Philip Schuyler, Feb. 9, 1777, *post*.

59. The draft is in the writing of Tench Tilghman.

Interest, before your quota for the Continental Army was cornpleted.

At the time of my writing that Letter, I was unacquainted with the terms on which these Colonial Regiments were to be raised; I little thought, that the pay of the Men was to be greater than of those in the Continental Service.—I foresaw indeed inconveniences enough without this, but the baneful Influence of advanced pay and bounty, already begins to shew itself in numberless Instances, and the poisonous effects of them have reached this Army. I do not know in what light the adoption of these Measures may appear to your State; to me, the contradistinctions which they are setting up appears to be fraught with every evil;—Manifestly injurious to the common cause, and an

indirect breach of the union; My duty therefore as Comr. in Chief of the Armies of the United States compels me, however disagreeable the task, to remonstrate against such mode of proceeding (unless Co-ercive Measures are used to bring forth your quota of Continental Troops), and to add, that if the defence of any particular State is the governing object of its Policy it can be no recommendation to me, or inducement for Congress to bestow any extraordinary attention to the defence of such State.

You will do me the justice to perceive Sir, that I am grounding my complaint upon an Information that the Continental, and Colonial Officers are recruiting Indiscriminately; the first at forty Shillings, the other at £3 pr. Month, the first, for hard and dangerous Service, far distant from home perhaps, the Second, for easy and secure duty at, or near, their own firesides. If my

Information is wrong, and you are pursuing co-ercive, or vigorous Measures to compleat the Continental Regiments required of your State in a short time; my remonstrance drops of course, and I have to ask your pardon for the trouble I have given you. If right, the error of the Policy is too obvious to need further animadversion upon it; sufficient it is to me, to warn you of the danger, and urge the Completion of the Regiments for Continental Service, the United States have a just claim upon you for these Men and will have but too good cause to complain, if they are depriv'd of them by your attempts to raise others.—The Importance of the Subject will appologize for the freedom, and candour of my Sentiments, especially when I assure you that with very great esteem and regard I have the Honr. to be, etc.<sup>61</sup>

## **To WILLIAM DUER**

Head Quarters, Morris Town, February 3, 1777.

Dr. Sir: I had the pleasure of receiving yours of the 28th January by Mr. Sacket,<sup>68</sup> who Communicated to me the Measures which had been planned by you and him, for forwarding the Military Operations on your Side, and which I most Sincerely wish had been carried into Execution.

I attribute our ill Success in the Neighbourhood of Kingsbridge, to the same cause that you do; I was apprehensive

61. George Johnston, who made the clean copy of this letter for Washington's signature, made half a dozen word changes of Washington's draft at various points, but without improvement on the General's choice of words.

68. Nathaniel Sacket. He, later, furnished secret intelligence to Washington.

from the Manner in which the Scene opened that nothing great was to be expected, but I hoped that the Country was not to be given up, altho' no Attempt was made upon the Fort.

I shall say but little to you byway of Letter, as I shall communicate my Sentiments in a Confidential Manner to Mr. Sacket; I will only observe, that altho' I could easily find a pretence for changing the Command in your Quarter, it would answer no end to appoint either of the three Brigadier Generals<sup>69</sup> that you mention; because they would be Commanded by the two provincial Major Generals already there.

From the Accounts which I have received from Colo Henry Livingston,<sup>70</sup> I do not find that there is a probability of filling more Regiments in the State of New York, than are already commissioned; if there was, I should take a pleasure in conferring the Command, which you desire, upon Mr. John Livingston<sup>71</sup> tho' a Stranger to me; but for one reason, and that is, that the appointment of a young Gentn. who has never served, to so high a Rank, would probably give disgust to many officers of long standing, who are still in inferior Stations. But I would wave this objection provided I could be any ways assured that Mr. Livingston's Interest, in conjunction with that of a good Colonel and Major would raise a Regiment. Have you fixed upon any person in your own mind proper for the Command ? If you have not, what think you of Lieut. Col Weissenfels,<sup>72</sup> he is an excellent Officer

and of approved Bravery. There is also Colo. Malcolm<sup>73</sup> to whom I offered a Regiment, but he candidly told me that he

69. Generals Mifflin, Parsons, and James Clinton.

70. Col, Henry Beekmart(?) Livingston, of the Fourth New York Regiment.

71. Duer had written that John Livingston was a son of Robert [R.] Livingston.

72. Lieut. Col. Frederick Weissenfels, of the Second New York Regiment.

73. Col. William Malcolm, of a New York State regiment. He was colonel of one of the 16 Additional Continental regiments in April, 1777; deputy adjutant general, Northern Department, in 1778; served, subsequently, as colonel of New York levies.

did not think he could raise one upon his own Interest. Perhaps his joined to Mr. Livingston's might do it. I shall be glad to hear your Sentiments on this Matter. I have the Honor etc.<sup>74</sup>

## **To GOVERNOR WILLIAM LIVINGSTON**

Head Quarters, Morris Town, February 4, 1777.

Sir: I am favored with your's of the 1st Inst. and shall be happy to hear that your House will adopt the Measures you propose recommending to them.

Our Army is in much the same Situation as when I had the Pleasure of seeing you here; we have had two Skirmishes with large Bodies of the Enemy in which they have little to Boast of and would have had less, had not a Colo. of ours behaved Ill in each for which they are now under Arrest. In the first, two of their Regiments were opposed by our advanced Party of 160 Men, who behaved well, and if supported by the Main Body of about 260. under command of Colo. Buckner, would have done great Damage.—We lost but two and from the best Accounts we have, the Enemy must have lost from 30. to 40. killed and a proportion wounded; amongst the killed we are informed was

their Colo. Commandant and the Lieut. Colo. Wounded, mortally it is said.—The last party that came out was headed by Sir William Erskine,<sup>81</sup> and consisted of, from two to three thousand with 8 Field pieces, they came for some Hay, which some of our Troops intended taking off the same Day; they met

74. The draft is in the writing of Tench Tilghman.

81. Lieut. Col. Sir William Erskine. Later he was colonel of the Eightieth Foot, British Army, and brigadier and major general in America.

near the Ground where the Hay was when a Smart Engagement ensued; when our Troops, vastly inferior in Number, were obliged to give way, however they again Rallied and attacked, when it became a sort of drawn Battle, and the Enemy after suffering considerably went off with so much precipitation, that the Hay &c. which they had on their Waggon, was in great part strew'd along the Road. In this affair it is said Colo. Ward<sup>82</sup> has behaved Ill for which I have ordered him arrested. Genl. Heath, after approaching Fort Independence, has thought fit to retire up towards the White Plains; it is confidently said, that Genl. Howe has ordered in the greatest part of the Rhode Island Troops, and I am informed that Lord Piercy<sup>83</sup> has arrived at Frogs Neck with part of them. I am etc.<sup>84</sup>

82. Col. Andrew Ward, of a Connecticut State regiment.

83. Maj. Gen. Hugh, Earl Percy.

84. The draft is in the writing of John Fitzgerald.

**To GOVERNOR JONATHAN TRUMBULL**

Head Quarters, Morris Town, February 6, 1777.



Sir: I am this Evening honored with yours of the 1st Inst., and am to thank you for your Promise of forwarding the New Levies, which I am sure you will perform to the utmost of your Abilities. I have, as I wrote you in my last, pressed Congress to send you forward a Supply of Money and the proper Books to open your Loan Office. As Mr. Mease the Cloathier General is now here, I have shewed him that part of your Letter respecting Cloathing and I refer you to him for a Letter, which he will write to you upon that Head. Instead of hiring Arms, as has been the Custom heretofore, I would have them purchased of the Owners, on Account of the Continent, they will by these means be kept in better repair, for a Man looks upon it that he is at liberty to use his own firelock as he pleases. But in the purchase of the Arms, I would have special care taken as to the Quality, for our Stores are already lumbered with useless ones. I have the Honor to be etc.<sup>11</sup>

11. The draft is in the writing of Tench Tilghman.

## **CIRCULAR TO MASSACHUSETTS, CONNECTICUT NEW HAMPSHIRE, AND RHODE ISLAND**

Head Quarters, Morris Town, February 6, 1777.

As the Arrival of a Sufficient quantity of Small Arms from Europe in time, to arm the Continental Troops, is a matter of great uncertainty, proper Steps should be immediately taken in your State to Collect all that can be purchased from private People. The Custom of hiring them for the Campaign, is attended with many bad Consequences, the owners take little care of them and carry them away or sell or change them when they please.

Particular Attention should be paid to the quality of the Firelock; no light trash Arms should on any Account be received in the Public Stores, if they are not Substantial, both in Lock and Barrel, they should be thrown upon the Hands of the Commissary who purchased them. I am &c.

P.S. Letters from Genl. Schuyler inform me, that the Post of Ticonderoga is left almost intirely naked; that it is in no Situation of Resistance; you will therefore be pleased, to hurry on your Regiments and order them immediately to that Place.<sup>12</sup>

12. The draft is in the writing of Tench Tilghman. The letter sent to New Hampshire, in the archives of the New Hampshire Historical Society, is dated Feb. 7, 1777.

### **To THE NEW YORK COMMITTEE OF SAFETY**

Head Quarters, Morris Town, February 8, 1777.

Sirs: Yesterday honored me with your two favors of the 22d and 25th. Ulto. Had the success that was reasonably expected from the Expedition undertaken by Genl. Heath, attended our Arms, I had flattering hopes of congratulating my Country, on the happy event of circumscribing her unnatural foe, within very narrow limits, and a fair prospect of retarding their early operations in the next Campaign, 'till we were completely ready to meet and effectually oppose them. I beg that you would do me the justice to believe, that I had no other view in mentioning the detention of some of the Continental Cloathing by your State, than a sincere wish to deprive the others of the smallest right to charge me with a Predilection in your favor; tho' my Inclination might have led to devote an unusual share of Attention to your Circumstances, yet 'tis necessary for me to endeavour in every Instance at impartial Justice. Mr. Hughes<sup>23</sup> was mistaken when he mentioned to one of your Members that apart of those Goods were to be left at Peekskill; From the first, I intended that they should be delivered into the hands of Mr. Mease the Cloathier General, who has my Orders to distribute them among the States, having just regard to their Numbers, Situation and Circumstances. He is now at this Place on that business and will when made up deliver them to the Regiments, as they want them.

I should be unhappy in the belief that any part of my Letter to you could be construed into the slightest hint, that you want to interfere in the Military Line. Heaven knows, that I greatly want

23. Hugh Hughes. He was colonel and Assistant Quartermaster General; later served as deputy quartermaster general of New York.

the Aid of every good Man, and that there are not such enviable pleasures attending my Situation, as to make me too jealous of its prerogatives. Rather than complain of your late Efforts in the Military Way, you deserve the Thanks of us all, And I feel myself happy in this opportunity of returning you mine, in the greatest truth and Sincerity. I am not without my Apprehensions for the Safety of the Fortress of Ticonderoga and have therefore wrote to New Hampshire and Massa. Bay, to forward their new Troops to that Place with all possible dispatch. From the Accounts I receive of the Success that attends the recruiting Service in those States, I have reason to expect, that Garrison will in a short time be in a respectable State of defence. I am Sorry that Experience has too fully proved, that General Howe has every Species of Intelligence he can wish for; I cannot therefore suppress my just Indignation at the Extraordinary requisition made by Mr. Loring his Commissary of Prisoners, that the Canada Gentlemen should have a safe pass thro' our Country; Our Assistance in returning home, I hope they would not doubt, could Prudence justify me in indulging them, with an opportunity of making every discovery they could wish, relating to our Situation. You were therefore perfectly right in refusing him. Every thing in the Cloathing Way passes thro' the hands of Mr. Mease, with him you will please to correspond on that Subject. Nothing material has happened lately. The Enemy's want of Forage compells them to send out very large Parties to secure it, those are always beat in, with some Loss. Their draft and Artillery horses die fast; and now that I have brought all the useful ones from their neighbourhood

I think they will meet with much difficulty in advancing. I am etc.<sup>24</sup>

### **CIRCULAR TO MASSACHUSETTS, NEW HAMPSHIRE, AND CONNECTICUT**

Head Quarters, Morris Town, February 8, 1777.

I have lately received several letters from Genl. Schuyler, calling upon me in the most pressing Manner, to send up a proper Reinforcement to secure the important pass of Ticonderoga; as he is

very apprehensive, that the Enemy will take the advantage and opportunity of Crossing the lake upon the Ice, and make themselves Masters of that valuable fortress; when the Troops, whose times are nearly expired, come away.

Van Schaick's Regiment, consisting of four hundred Men, from the State of New York has already Marched, and I beg that such number of Men (belonging to the quota you are to raise [of the 88 Battalions]) as are recruited, may be equipped with the greatest expedition and forwarded on to Ticonderoga. If the Regiments are not full, a proper number of Officers should be left behind, to cornpleat them and march them up, when they are so.

As I have mentioned this Matter in one of my former Letters, it may perhaps look like a doubt of your Exertions to press it again, but when you consider, of how much importance it is, to prevent the Enemy from passing the lakes and forming a junction with their

24. The draft is in the writing of George Johnston.

force below, I hope you will excuse my making this Request the subject of a Seperate Letter. I am &ca.<sup>25</sup>

## **To GOVERNOR JONATHAN TRUMBULL**

Head Quarters, Morris Town, February 9, 1777.

Sir: You will receive herewith Sixty thousand dollars, for the use of the recruiting Service in your State, which I desire you will distribute among the Officers in proportion to their Wants. I desire you will not appropriate any part of this Money to the reimbursement of the sum advanced to Colo. Sheldon; as I every day expect an order from Congress, which will enable me to give you a draft for the whole Sum, upon the loan office. I am &c.<sup>32</sup>

## **To THE NEW YORK LEGISLATURE**

Head Quarters, Morris Town, February 10, 1777.

Gentn.: After every attempt to stop the progress of the Small Pox, I found that it gained such head among the Southern Troops, that there was no possible way of saving the lives of most of those who had not had it, but by introducing inoculation generally. The Physicians are now making the proper preparation to inoculate all at the several Posts in this Quarter, and Doctor Shippen will inoculate all the

25. The draft is in the writing of Tench Tilghman. The words in brackets were inserted by Washington.

32. The draft is in the writing of Tench Tilghman.

Recruits, that have not had the disorder, as fast as they come into Philadelphia. They will loose no time by this Operation, as they will go thro', while their Cloathing, Arms and Accoutrements are preparing. That the Army may be kept as clear as possible, of this terrible disorder, I have recommended it to every State, which is to send Troops to the Army in this Department, immediately to begin upon the inoculation of their Recruits and to continue till they have gone thro' the whole; by these means very few will be down at a time, and of those, many will be fit for duty (should the occasion be pressing) the whole time.

I think your Hospital, for this purpose, should be at or in the Neighbourhood of Peekskill; because if the Enemy should hear that many of our Men were down, and should make an Attempt to fall upon us at that time, many of the Patients would, as I said before, be as able to give Opposition as if they were intirely well. We intend for the present to keep the Matter as much a Secret as possible, and I would advise you to do the same. After the first and Second division of Patients (who should be inoculated at an interval of five or Six days) have gone thro', the thing will become extremely light, and of little consequence whether it is known or not. I am &c.<sup>43</sup>

**To GOVERNOR JONATHAN TRUMBULL**

Head Quarters, Morris Town, February 10, 1777.

Sir: The impossibility of keeping the Small Pox from

43. The draft is in the writing of Tench Tilghman.

spreading thro' the Army in the natural way, has determined us, upon the most mature deliberation, to inoculate all the New Troops, that have not had this disorder.

I have wrote to General Parsons, to fix upon some proper place, and to superintend the inoculation of the Troops of your State; taking it for granted, that you would have no objection to so salutary a Measure, upon which depends not only the lives of all the Men, who have not had the Small Pox, but also the Health of the whole Army, which would otherwise soon become a Hospital of the most loathsome kind. Proper Steps are taking to inoculate the Troops already here, and all the Southern Levies will undergo the Operation as they pass Philadelphia. I have wrote to the States of New York and Rhode Island, to have their Troops also inoculated, and I hope our Army will, by these precautions; be intirely free, of that terrible distemper the ensuing Campaign. As the Troops from Massachusetts and New Hampshire are ordered immediately up to Ticonderoga, they can (as was the case last Year) be inoculated there. I am &ca.<sup>44</sup>

**To GOVERNOR NICHOLAS COOKE**

Morris Town, February 10, 1777.

Sir: The deplorable and melancholly situation, to which one of our Armies was reduced last Campaign by the small Pox and the Certainty, that no precautions can prevent that disorder from infecting our Troops, that act in the Middle States, many being now

44. The draft is in the writing of Tench Tilghman.

infected with it; has determined me by the advice of my General Officers here to introduce inoculation immediately, as the only means of preventing this Calamity; the greatest that can befall an Army, when they take it in the Natural way. I have wrote to Brigadier General Parsons, now in Connecticut, to assemble the Regiments raising in that State and to have them inoculated, without loss of time; I have also mentioned that those from Rhode Island, would come on and take the infection and claim his Attention. As this Measure, I make no doubt, will appear expedient to you and to promise many Salutary consequences, I wish your good offices in forwarding on your Regiments to General Parsons for this Purpose. This advantage will result from their being inoculated there, in preference to Rhode Island; they will be nearer the Scene of Action and may with more ease and Expedition, give their Aid in cases of Emergency. But if it cannot be done there, I should hope it will not be delayed a moment in the State of Rhode Island. There being the most pressing Call for the Massachusetts and New Hampshire Troops in the Northern Department, and being ordered there, they cannot go thro' the process, before they March; when they arrive there, I suppose the Measure will be adopted. I need not mention the necessity of as much Secrecy upon the Subject, as it will admit of, it being beyond doubt, that the Enemy will avail themselves of the event, as far as they can; If common Success attends the Measures, I trust we shall have nothing to fear, but all to hope from it.<sup>45</sup> I have the honor etc.<sup>46</sup>

45. On February 13 Dr. Benjamin Rush wrote to Washington, in the name of the Medical Committee, that Congress had directed the committee to request that all the troops which had not had smallpox be inoculated. Rush's letter is in the *Washington Papers*.

46. The draft is in the writing of Robert Hanson Harrison.